

# **ROAD TO KINGDOM**

*– Oukoku e Tsuzuku Michi –*

**- Volume 7 -**

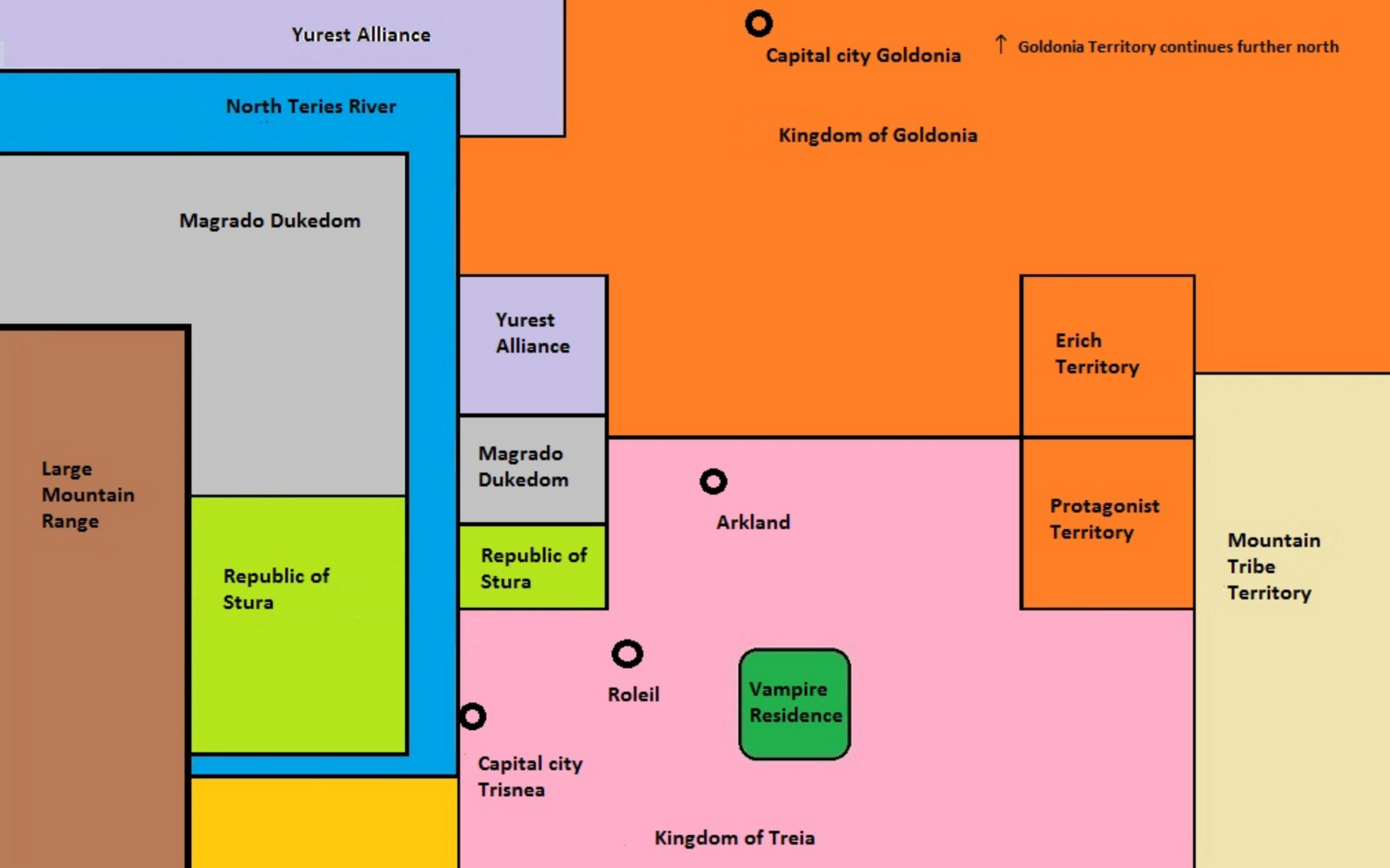
**AUTHOR:**

**Ofuro Ashitsubo**

**ARTIST:**

**Hikage Eiji**

**[ Translated by: Light Novels Translations ]**



Yurest Alliance

Capital city Goldonia

↑ Goldonia Territory continues further north

North Teries River

Kingdom of Goldonia

Magrado Dukedom

Yurest  
Alliance

Erich  
Territory

Large  
Mountain  
Range

Magrado  
Dukedom

Arkland

Protagonist  
Territory

Republic of  
Stura

Republic of  
Stura

Mountain  
Tribe  
Territory

Roleil

Vampire  
Residence

Capital city  
Trisnea

Kingdom of Treia

# CHAPTER 88

## SPRINGTIME GRAND TRAINING EXERCISE

---

–Aegir POV–

Each squad in the central army and all the gathered commanders of each of the lords are shouting.

“2nd Division Cavalry Company to the front!!”

“Divide into your respective units and advance.”

“Follow Knight Arnaf.<sup>1</sup>”

“Heavy knights of Maroff, demonstrate your power!!”

“...”

“This is terrible...”

Celia, who lines up beside me, and Leopolt have a discouraged look on their faces. The central army is organized in a style similar to the Federation... adopting a method with 200 people per group divided into companies, splitting and merging based on necessity. My private army and the eastern independent army will be used together so I had them follow their methods too. In addition, I have the absolutely incompatible bow cavalry do as much as they can to participate in the training and reorganization of troops.

“But if everybody is doing their own thing to this degree, it’s conversely a good thing.”

“...If you mean for the others, then yes.”

Even when Leopolt smiles, he’s dripping with sarcasm.

The lords’ armies were that free to do as they pleased. Since they’re small-time lords, they personally lead the troops, and the cavalry, archers and spearmen are all mixed

into a dumpling-like formation as they march forward. There are also instances where a 500-man army is divided into two groups, but depending on the standing of the commanders, the groups are split into a 100-man group and a 400-man group. Of course, the composition of their troops are all over the place.

There are no limits to the number of problematic points I can speak of, but there is one thing that bothers me to no end.

“Heeey, why if it isn’t Viscount Hardlett! You have a large army as expected, huh? But still, my troops won’t lose to yours.”

I feel like I’ve seen this middle-aged man before in a past ball.

According to Nonna, he should be one of the traditional nobles that ‘understand’ the new nobles and he also had the mark that indicated he was only staring at her breasts.

“Behold! The ones like demons that have participated actively in the Arkland war campaign, the gale lightning strike phoenix heavy spear knights.”

“...They look amazing in a lot of ways, don’t you think?”

“.....”

Celia becomes expressionless. Leopolt, you would have snickered to yourself, right?

I don’t know in which way they appear to be like a lightning strike or a gale, but for the time being, I can tell what they are trying to represent with a phoenix on their armor and their fluttering red capes.

“Well, well, isn’t that just light armor? My gold lightning knights won’t lose to that!”

The knights that arrive are nothing like golden knights, much less lightning. It seems that most of the nobles participating in this training exercise have brought their self-made groups of knights, with more or less long and meaningless names attached to them.

“As I thought, rather than a military exercise, this is closer to a show-off exhibition for the nobles that have gathered here.”

“That might be the case. Which means there might have been some meaning to bringing a large army. The influence that we have in our territory tends to fade when we’re in the central area. It will work positively in our favor if we moderately show off our existence.”

As I converse with Leopolt, a large cloud-shaped army splits into several positions, pushing through and surging forward, as if shoving aside the lords’ armies that scattered about on the training grounds. It is the primary force of Goldonia – the troops under Erich’s command and the main force of central army.

Having been brushed aside like that, the nobles who have been happily showing off their own armies now have unpleasant expressions.

“I see, contrasting the disorderly lords’ armies with the well-commanded central army; their aim is probably to display the king’s overwhelming power.”

Leopolt whispers and Celia nods in agreement.

“But while those guys may look irritated, they don’t appear to be overwhelmed at all.”

“A fool that doesn’t even understand the differences between himself and others won’t become a problem from the start.”

Fumu, is that how it is?

“S-so many warriors are here... the chiefs of the plains are awesome...”

The accompanying Luna stares in wonder at the central army. Even with all the mountain nation gathered, they amount to only 10 000, but if we just count the central army, there are already close to 70 000 troops. Not all of them have gathered, but it is still an overwhelming sight.

“Lord Hardlett, have you caused any accidents?”

Once the army finishes lining up, Erich comes over. His face looks somewhat tired after seeing the lords’ distinctive armies are out on display.

“No problems here.”

“-!!”

Luna, seeing how I slightly bowed my head, was shocked and froze in place. Maybe I shouldn't be showing this to her too much.

“Hm? Over there... you've increased them again? You're free to increase the number of women you have, but I won't praise you for bringing them along with you to the army.”

“Luna is an excellent commander. I didn't have her accompany me as a woman.”

Luna gets off her horse in a hurry seeing how his gaze was concentrated on her. She probably doesn't know how to react to a person of a higher standing than me, her chief.

“We're in the middle of training, you can remain on your horse.”

After being urged by Erich, she once again jumped on her horse.

“Hooh, to be able to jump on a warhorse like that, she must not be your ordinary woman. So she isn't just your lover?”

That's what I've been saying. However, the only man by my side on the battlefield is Leopolt, while I have Celia, Irijina and Luna for a total of three women. If this continues, it will be harder to deny the rumors that I'm a womanizer.

While I was thinking, Erich mentions something to his subordinate, then speaks to me again when he finished.

“Lord Hardlett, your men also look like they're bored with various things. This isn't a venting of frustration, but don't you want to try doing some actual combat training?”

What Erich suggested is actual combat training with a baron, another new noble who received territory.

“Your troops will be the same number as the opponent – 600 – and they will only be infantry. From what I can see, you have many cavalry, but as expected we can't have the cavalry participate in actual combat after all.”

Even if the cavalry don't have weapons, their existence is threatening enough. More

so, if the training horses charge against the war horses, the smaller horses who jump out in front first will just get trampled.

If it's only 600 infantry, Leopolt may be discontent... I could always do it, but I might get too heated. If that's the case, then...

"Celia, you take command."

"Eeh!?"

Celia's eyes open wide in amazement, but I think it's fine to let her command a number as small as this. Irijina already has experience commanding a similar-sized group, so it won't be new to her. Plus, this is just training, so even if she makes a mistake, it doesn't mean much.

"You're competent enough. Do you not want to do it?"

"No!! Please allow me! Please let me do it!!"

"Get ready right away."

When I take a look, Erich is the one who is staring in amazement.

"Lord Hardlett... the opponent isn't someone like you, but he's still a somewhat capable soldier. He isn't senile enough that you can put a woman as his opponent."

It's fine, isn't it? It seems interesting. Rather, I honestly think Celia can go pretty far with this. I'll give her one more push to increase her winning percentage even more.

"Celia, if you win, I'll make lots of love to you one-on-one tonight."

The cute girl's face turns red as she jumps forward as fast as an arrow.



"Let the training begin!!"

We oversee the grounds on top of the watchtower as the 600-infantry squad advances on both sides. When they reach a certain point, the archers start shooting and both

sides receive a rain of arrows from above.

The tips of the arrows and spears are covered in thick cloth to limit their lethality, but they will still hurt if they hit, and it is possible to die if you trip and fall onto them. It is training to simulate actual combat after all, so determination to prepare for this degree of danger is needed.

“They still didn’t come out from that?”

“Appears so.”

If my head gets hit by a spear, then I’d feel like beating the opponent to death. Not to brag, but with my strength, I could kill people if I threw it at them, wrapped in cloth or not.

“Ooh, they moved.”

Erich shouts with an excited voice. Amongst the volley of arrows, the first one to crumble was Celia. The center portion of the soldiers, receiving concentrated fire from the arrows, wasn’t able to endure and started to retreat backwards ever-so-slightly, causing both wings to cave in. Naturally, the opponent didn’t miss this chance to focus their attacks on the center portion, divide them up and try to defeat them instantly.

““This is...”“

Leopolt’s and Erich’s voices overlap. It seems unnatural to me too. No matter what happened, it is too quick for them to collapse, and the way they’re collapsing is too forced.

Sure enough, the opponent instantly concentrate their attacks in the center, but as if the collapse never happened, Celia’s central portion didn’t take any additional steps backward. Then, the right and left wings quickly commence their attacks from the flanks.

“It’s a half envelopment!”

Erich shouts loudly. Somehow, this guy is enjoying himself the most.

If there are enemies besides the ones in front and you also attack from the flank, you



force yourself to fight a hard battle. But if you use a half envelopment, you can receive the attacks from both flanks. In this kind of situation, the enemy squad will rapidly exhaust themselves, and they will be unable to bulldoze their way through. If they fall into a half envelopment, they will have to decide whether to reinforce the flanks or retreat, or else their squad will collapse in the blink of an eye.

The opponent is receiving the attacks from both wings and trying to break free somehow, but they eventually give up and begin to retreat. But Celia wouldn't be satisfied with that.

"Umu, to be able to turn that situation around and counterattack in no time at all, you wouldn't think a woman is leading the army."

Rather than calling it the ability to lead, it might be related to her personality. Celia has an offensive personality in the first place anyways. Since she doesn't have to turn around and defend any longer, she can step forward to attack.

Celia's squad is leaning towards the right wing and are rotating around the opponent while continuing their fierce attacks. The opposing soldiers appear to be moving to the rear guard, unable to deal with the continuous attacks following their failed offensive maneuver. Most of all, the majority of Celia's soldiers are engaging the opponent, while many of the other party's soldiers on the opposite side of the rotating attacks have no clue what is going on, turning into toy soldiers.

"However, this is an oversight. If she switches the most fatigued soldiers from the center portion with the soldiers on the left wing and continues her attack, she would be able to instantly crush them."

If Leopolt says so, then she still has a ways to go, but even so, Celia's squad is overwhelming the opponent. As the commander, Celia is the only one on a horse and is wielding her sword while shouting. The formation instantly changes to form a clean convex shape.

"It's a charge! She intends to settle things quickly!!"

Erich is really enjoying himself. He asked one of his men to take command of the central army so he can enjoy himself here, right?

The opponent is responding with a box formation, but Celia's order to charge was one

step faster. Having the entire army charge to follow up with the rain of arrows which collapsed the enemy formation – I know it's just training, but when I see the soldiers shouting like this, it gets me excited. With by-the-book tactics, the enemy unit is torn apart and everything falls into chaos as the opponent allows Celia's army to penetrate through to the center. At Erich's orders, an arrow with a cloth attached to it is shot up and the training is finished. It is Celia's victory.

"I thought you surrounded yourself with young girls to relieve your sexual urges, but it turns out she's quite the female wolf."

Erich saw something interesting so he has a satisfied smile on his face.



"For the final charge, you didn't need to form such a neat formation in that situation. Rather than managing your own allies, you should take advantage of the enemy's confusion and start charging as soon as possible."

"..."

After the battle, Celia is talking to Leopolt about something. She's looking a little discouraged but she writes down everything in her Celia-notepad. In the past, I took a peek when she was asleep, and in that notebook, there are things ranging from analysis of diplomatic information, considered to be national secrets, to the locations of the most delicious confectionaries. By the way, Celia also noted the day she suffered diarrhea, but the page was splattered in ink and turned pitch black.

"Celia, well done."

Unlike Leopolt, I'll openly praise her. Although it was just training, it was still a fight, and everything will be fine if she wins. It might be fine to entrust Celia with soldiers from now on.

"Thank you very much! S-so now..."

"Let's make tomorrow a day off, since I'll be so affectionate with you that you won't even be able to stand. How do you want it?"

"..."

Celia hugs me without saying anything. When she's like this, it's ridiculous to consider her as a commander; she's just my cute Celia.



Night

“Aaaah!! It feels good!! I'll cum!!”

Inside the tent, Celia is lying flat on her back on the bed while I'm in between her spread-open legs, burying my face in her crotch and thoroughly licking her vagina. Celia gets embarrassed and hugs a pillow, hiding half her face.

But I don't hold back. I grab the tight and slender thigh, hold it firmly and lick her intensely, making loud sloshing noises, spreading my saliva inside her hole with my tongue and also sticking my tongue in her ass when an opportunity presents itself.

“My ass is dirty! Please stop!”

I remove my mouth since she was desperately struggling, but honey-like fluid is overflowing from her hole, and even her asshole is opening up, although just slightly. Her body is clearly not disliking it.

“You don't want it? Even though you've become this wet?”

“It's embarrassing... plus to have you lick such a dirty part is a little...”

I put fingers in both of her holes as I bring my face closer to her.

“What am I to you today?”

“Uhm, well... my daddy...”

“Then you don't have to hold back. I will lick you anywhere and everywhere. You just have to feel good.”

I remove my finger and I lick around her loose and open asshole and vagina, but this time she doesn't resist at all.

“Daddy! It feels good, I can’t hold it anymore, I’m gonna squirt!!”

The inside of her hole starts to twitch so I fix my mouth to her crotch and also rub my nose against her clitoris as well.

“Ah!! Aah—-!!”

Celia tosses away the pillow and presses against my head with both hands as she convulses. At the same time, a large amount of her love juices flows into my mouth.

“Haa, haa,... I’m sorry. I sprayed my juices in daddy’s mouth... in return, this time I’ll-”

Celia and I are already naked. She gets on all fours while still breathing roughly, approaches me and brings the already hard member to her open mouth.

“Celia’s mouth is small after all. It’s fine if you don’t swallow it, just lick the entire thing.”

“Hhahmo, I undesthan.”

Celia sticks out her tongue and gently licks my meat rod. At first, she services me in between my legs while I was sitting on the bed, but as I gradually got more and more aroused and my dick got more erect, she is slowly moving further out.

“It’s getting larger and harder... Can I get on your lap?”

When I pet her head and smile, she straddles my thigh and drops her bum on my lap, continuing to lick and suck my meat rod. While she was licking me, love juices were dripping endlessly onto my thigh and she was also slowly grinding her clitoris against me. The slippery feeling also increases my pleasure, and right when Celia had to gulp the pre-cum leaking from the tip, I push her shoulder and separate our bodies.

“Stand in front and show me your entire body.”

“Yes!”

Celia stands by the side of the bed, spreads her legs shoulder-width apart and exposes everything to me. Her hands are clasped behind her head, and she didn’t hide any part

of her body. Celia slowly turns her body around so that I can see the front and the back, and my dick pulses, getting even larger.

“How is it?... Are there any weird areas? Is it better for me to shave all the hair from my crotch area?”

“It’s fine if you don’t. Your silver hair is pretty. Your body has also matured quite nicely... your breasts have become more like a woman’s and your posture is getting erotic.”

“Aegir-sama... It is so that I can give everything to Aegir-sama. It’s for that reason that I became this naughty.”

Celia also gets turned on from showing me everything and seems to have forgotten the setting. Her gaze is completely drawn to my meat rod.

When I stroke my rod slowly in front of her, Celia couldn’t bear it and lowers her hands from her head, spreading her own hole open for me. If she shows me this much, I’ll have no choice but to put it in her. I jump up from the bed to close the distance between us instantly and lift her up by hugging her hips.

“I’m just gonna skewer you like this, ‘kay?”

“Yes, please thrust it in me while holding me like this.”

As I hold Celia, the two of us adjust our bodies to match each other and she positions my shaft at the entrance of her hole.

“Here I go..... It’s going to pierce me!!!”

It was almost as if Celia fell down on me when we connect with each other, and the momentum instantly causes half my meat rod to shove into her. The current length buried into her is Celia’s limit. My rod is already pushing against Celia’s womb and she’s moaning like crazy.

“More! I want more of Aegir-sama’s penis to be deeper inside me! I want to take it in all the way to the root!!”

“If I put any more in you, you’ll break. If you just rock your body, you’ll feel good.”

“Uuu, it’s fine even if my body breaks, and even if I can’t bear children... as long as Aegir-sama is by my side and is willing to make love to me, I’ll be happy no matter what you do...”

“Don’t say that, because having you bear my children one day is a pleasure for me too.”

I say this while rocking Celia up and down and granting her pleasure. She responds to my actions by gasping and spraying her love juices.

After that, we didn’t just do it hugging while standing, but also hugging while sitting, with her pushed up against the wall, and lying together on our sides. While watching my cute Celia distort her expressions, I prepare myself to climax.

“Please pardon me.”

Feeling that I’m about to cum, Celia wants to get me even more turned on by biting the nape of my neck.

“Hey, the last time you did it, something terrible happened.”

“My hole has expanded since that time, so it should be fine this time.”

I touch Celia’s face and brush my hand over her nape and mouth.

“When my cock expands and I see your look of suffering, it makes my heart wilt. Please let me make you feel good and then ejaculate.”

“...alright. But I’ll one day make it more gaping wide and show you that I can take Aegir-sama’s thing all the way to the root.”

Conversely, I suck on the nape of the motivated Celia and bite lightly. It wasn’t hard enough to draw, but it was just enough to leave mark behind, letting me feel a sense of complete dominance over her.

“Ah!? Don’t tell me!”

Celia hugs me in a panic.

“Sorry, cumming!!”

“Aaaah!! Daddy! Your seed is coming outtt!!”

My hips remain still, but the feeling of dominating her incite my ejaculation and the suddenly expanding cock starts to pulse strongly. Celia wraps her legs around me so as to not let me escape and squeezes me to brace for what was coming. If it was a man with a weak dick, he would have felt pain from the tight clenching, but my cock pushes back with strong pulses as it injects my seed juices deep into her.

“Daddy... Daddy...”

Celia remembers the setting she was in and starts whispering in my ear, as my long ejaculation continues and she remains in ecstasy. The seed that enters her womb causes her belly to inflate, while the stuff that couldn't fit spills out of the entrance with a considerable amount of momentum.

“Aaah... it feels good. Celia, you were really good.”

While still cumming, I scoop some of the semen that spilled out with my finger and when I brought it to Celia's mouth, she lovingly licks all of it.

“Daddy, I love you... more than anything in this world... and more than anyone...”

It felt like a spike pierced my heart a little but the thoughts melt away after the passionate kissing and the tangling of tongues.

Guards were standing outside our tent, so when Celia realizes that, she'll turn bright red. Although that'll probably be tomorrow.



### **-Third Person POV-**

Treia, Outskirts of Roleil

“The construction seems to be progressing steadily.”

Amongst the sounds of work, a noble wearing a fancy-colored cloak is overlooking

everything on horseback. That was the person who rarely left the capital, the prime minister of Treia – Marquess Dunois.

“Of course it is, prime minister, Your Excellency. It is advancing even further than your initial plans.”

The noble conversing with the prime minister isn't a youngster full of vigor, but rather an elderly noble who is stroking his long white beard. He is an old general and also the commander of the fortress planned to be built on the northern boundaries.

“Hooh, so the twist in the story about the famine, was that true?”

“Yes, there was a famine causing a lack of food, though having said that, the revolt that we are still severely careful about can no longer happen anymore. Then, at least the daily food alone will be supplied for the construction of the fortress and the occupied citizens will have no choice but to work for us. Not only the prisoners, but also the poor will come running to work for us.”

The old noble uses the name ‘residents of the occupied land’. The nation of Treia is already permanently dominating the former Arkland territory, and has given up on gaining any profits. Now the area is a so-called buffer in place for the coming battle with Goldonia and only has value as a supply base for the labor force.

“Though imperfect, if there is a way for them to live without rebelling, then the cowardly people will choose our side.”

“.....”

The two of them stop talking for some time. Even though you give them enough food to not to starve to death, constructing a fortress is a gruelling work cruel enough to grind the rebels to death. The both of them knew that eventually most of them will die of illness or overwork. The two of them change the subject.

“As far as I can see, the fortress is already pretty complete, don't you think?”

“It's nothing really, I just added some minor improvements to the northern fortress line that was already built up over several decades.”

“With this, even if Goldonia sends an army of 10 000 troops over here, they shouldn't



be able to breakthrough that easily.”

“Of course, prime minister. Although I’m old, I have considerable confidence in the construction of a fortress. Even with the thick fortress walls, a moat and fence will also be surrounding the building. So it isn’t something that can be brought down with some ballista or catapult, and if they were to capture our camps one by one, it would take an enormous amount of time and sacrifices on their part.”

The prime minister agrees and nods. Conscription is already occurring within the nation and several tens of thousands of new troops can be reinvested. Those inexperienced guys may not be useful in a field battle, but if it’s a fortress siege, then they should be able to produce results just through their numbers. According to the information from the spies, Goldonia’s military strength is about 80 000 compared to 40 000 on Treia’s side, but if they hole up in the fortress, they will definitely not be at a disadvantage.

“Anyways, in the east... how should we deal with ‘that’ guy?”

The elder noble continues to speak.

“He doesn’t have such a large army, but has defeated our kingdom’s army several times, and his ability to instantly invade into the central area cannot be underestimated. With him running around, he will hinder us in our battle in the north too.”

“We will be taking countermeasures. It is simple, but I plan to construct a moat and fence surrounding our encampments at the border zone in the east. We won’t be able to protect the adjacent occupied territory, but if there is an attack, the guards will immediately burn the food and poison the wells before retreating.”

On the eastern side, there is a newly appointed commander with plenty of experience. There shouldn’t be any big screwups.

“His main force consists mainly of cavalry. If we just set up moats and fences, he will lose his superiority, and water and fodder will just pile up. He can’t bring enough portions for everybody after all, so if we burn each and every village and prevent him from getting any supplies, he’ll stop advancing eventually.”

Most of it was from second-hand opinions from soldiers, but that’s enough. Someone

like the prime minister doesn't need to know the details of the army.

"It's fine if the eastern area – the worst area – gets roughed up. If the surrounding nations get involved too, that guy won't be able to move at all, even in the remote regions."

Just in case, when the time for war comes, an army will need to be placed at the eastern border. If there is an anti-cavalry unit and the encampments are used defensively, it won't be so easy to invade like the previous incident. The top priority in the prime minister's mind is definitely that the main forces of Goldonia will come down south to the northern border. Everything depends on whether the fortress is able to withstand or not.

"It may be a redundant check, but how long will it hold up against the entire army of Goldonia?"

The old noble puffs out his chest.

"Excluding the forces in the east, if we concentrate the rest of the troops in this fortress, we can easily hold out for one year at this moment... if we have until autumn, even if they attack continuously for five years, I'll show you that this fortress won't crumble."

The prime minister estimates that it would take half a year to get the surrounding nations to act. If the fortress can hold out that long, he can convince each nation and Goldonia will start to feel uneasy as well. One year is plenty of time.

"Wonderful! But just to be really sure, make some finishing touches to make the fortress even stronger. I will provide you with the materials and funds with top priority."

"That is much appreciated. Since we were stuck inside the castle during the times Arkland was doing well, and considering the times we kept saying we disliked being on the defensive, this is pretty much a dream... By the way, prime minister, Your Excellency, this fortress has names for each castle, but the entirety is still unnamed. With such a large fortress as this, it would be sad to leave its name as 'the northern fortress', don't you think?"

The prime minister, who has many faces even in political situations, has a rare smile

on his face.

“Count, this fortress is basically the same as your child. In that case, I shall give it a name befitting that significance... the impenetrable fortress that protects our Treia will be named the Majino Fortress.”

“Oooh...! To use my name on a fortress that will remain guarding our country for all eternity... there is no greater honor than this!!”

The prime minister and the elder noble, Count Majino, give each other a toast with the glasses that their men brought them. There was nobody who doubts the majestic appearance of this endlessly continuing wall of stone will protect them from any and all threats.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Spring.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 3000 At most 6000

Assets: 9350 gold (6600) (Internal Affairs Materials -200) (Labor Cost -400) (Nonna -30)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Rita (maid?), Catherine (lewd), Melissa, Maria, Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Territory: Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Yoguri (just eating meals)

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 51, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 89

## THE MELANCHOLY OF A SMALL WIFE

---

-Aegir POV-

The springtime training exercise that continued for several weeks is reaching its end, and I can start to see fatigue and boredom form even on the faces of those in the lords' armies, who were previously showing off their movements like some majestic decoration.

"Nevertheless, your army formation is strange. Regardless of how vast our territories are, to have over half of your entire army consist of cavalry, you won't be able to form a half-decent composition."

In the middle of the exercise, Erich would come over to me whenever he could. I understand that the other squads are miserable to watch, but there are other new nobles who will be used as the core of the army who also have private armies too. Compared to them, Erich is clearly beside me at a way higher ratio. I wanted to flirt with Celia, Irijina and the others too.

"Is there a reason why you divided your army into infantry and cavalry for the training?"

As expected, just by looking at the contents of the training, he noticed that instead of working on the cooperation between infantry and cavalry, I'm using them separately.

"If you have the cavalry and infantry advance together, it would kill the marching speed. It's inevitable for an attack on an encampment, but you can use the mobility of the cavalry to your advantage during a night raid."

"That's how it is."

Leopolt whispers in my ear, and I only added a last word in the explanation to Erich. Erich makes a resigned face.

If a normal cavalry unit is used to supplement the army, a well-trained longspear unit

can completely stop it, so that composition won't work. However, bow cavalry are extremely effective against longswords, so if they are used in conjunction with regular cavalry, even a pure cavalry unit is enough to topple the enemy's defences.

But if I explain this to him, he'll ask more questions, so I didn't say anything. Irijina is holding her crotch and waiting for Erich to leave anyways. It looks like the enormous amount of semen I shot in her earlier is leaking out.

"Any formation is fine. Just do training that would make them last in actual combat... just spare me from the names like 'holy light' or 'gale' or whatever."

Erich looks like he's had enough. A small grin appears on my face, but I immediately change my expression to a serious one. At last, the pure white juices ran down Irijina's thighs. It's quite the amount, if I do say so myself.

"What I'm about to say from this point on is to be shared only amongst those present here."

Celia hastily gets her notepad out.

"I don't think I need to explain but... it won't be long before Treia and our nation go to war with each other."

I stay silent while nodding. It's really something that doesn't require explaining.

"Treia seems to be abandoning its defenses on the former Arkland territory. The nobles and big merchants are also migrating and returning back to their home country one after the other. The work on restoring the castle walls of Arkland, the former capital city, has also been halted."

"Are they giving up the occupied territory and devoting their attention to their homeland?"

It's certain that they can stabilize their domestic affairs and security if their scope is smaller.

"No, the relentless pressure from the heavy tax and rebellion from the past still persists. Rather than abandoning their rule, they are making a strategic judgement, preparing for situations against our country."

“Was there a castle in the northern area of Treia’s home country?”

“Umu, there was a line of fortresses in the northern city that protected them from Arkland, but recently it appears that line of fortresses is undergoing repair and reinforcement.”

Fumu, so that mean’s that they’ve completely gone into a passive state.

“There’s also the fact that they’re conscripting soldiers and reinforcing their army, but in regards to that, our nation’s pace of reinforcement is faster... but that fortress is a heavily armored building which has been continuously fortified for close to 100 years. If it has been modified in such a way that it can work together alongside the other castles, then even if we have a large army, we won’t be able to take it down in a short period of time.”

“Is there a need to obediently and naively pass through the western highway?”

No matter what kind of fortress it is, it’s not going to extend infinitely. The only part it defends should be the main highway in the west and the plains area and it shouldn’t stretch to the eastern region.

“Well the thing is, we can’t do that either. The only decently maintained highway is in the west, so if we go to the east, we would have to take a long detour, not to mention it’s the wilderness so it would take considerably more time. If there aren’t any large cities along the way, we won’t be able to supply provisions to the army either.”

Right now, the central army has expanded to a size of close to 70 000. Just providing food to the army requires us to hold down quite a large city, and unless we use a maintained highway, it would be near impossible to transport supplies from Goldonia’s mainland. With that said, it’s not a wise idea to split our forces and make a detour right in the middle of the enemy camp either.

“But it’s not contiguous and it doesn’t continue endlessly right?”

“But there aren’t really any weak points. Of course there are several points where there are gaps, but those areas are swamps and cliffs. If we try to attack from there, they’ll really get us all in one fell swoop.”

I've heard that Treia traditionally excels at using defensive tactics. It means they have an advantage in the fortress.

"So that means we breakthrough from the front?"

"At the moment, I believe that's the most reliable option. We can gather the craftsmen and have them make a large catapult or ballista, but it might take some time."

That reminds me, there aren't many siege weapons in my army. There's only that pipe that blows fire. I'll share it with him a little bit later.

"They are also starting to construct a defensive encampment to the west of our territory. I don't think you'll be able to breakthrough them as easily as last time, but I want you to somehow threaten them from the east and lure some of their forces out of the fortress."

"I know."

I already know about those little things they're doing slowly near the border. There are some people who insisted that we should also construct a defensive encampment to match them, but going on the defense doesn't fit my personality. It's better to attack them before you get attacked.

Erich said that if there were any changes to the situation, he might summon me back to the capital after the training. After declaring such a strange warning, he left. Celia is memorizing the conversation we had using her mental notepad and closes her eyes in deep thought. Irijina turns red after realizing that all of my seed leaked out.

"Leopolt, is there anything you can do about the conversation we just had?"

"Yes, the details will come after but roughly speaking-"

"I see, do we need a powerful siege weapon?"

If necessary, I'll go whine to Erich.

"That won't be necessary... however, it won't be bad to have it, so please ask him."

What the heck? Does he think it's free to make me bow my head like this?



“In the first place... no matter how large it is, it is a well known fact that an immovable fortress can't win against a mobile army. If no giant can move it, then tiny people can defeat it.”

If he's this confident, it'll all work out. I'll be injecting some semen into Luna's hole next then.



A few days later, after the training ended, Capital Goldonia

“““Cheers.”“““

The training is finished, so we sit in the bar at the capital. We couldn't call on all the soldiers to come, so the only ones at the bar are a portion of the commanders, while the other soldiers will get their alcohol at the garrison. Women will be paid for using their own money.

“Please have another cup, chief.”

“Thanks.”

Luna is beside me pouring alcohol. I had Celia and Irijina return home first. It goes without saying for Celia, who has weak tolerance to alcohol, but if Irijina drinks, her bottomless pit will empty the store of its alcohol. Plus, if I'm surrounded by too many women, I'll lose the chance to meet someone new.

“Here you go.”

“Aah, thannnks... you have a nice ass, miss. How 'bout a round with me?”

Christoph is just a private so he should have stayed in the garrison, but he's a friend from the past and has been with me for awhile. My private army is slightly lacking, so I have been continuously letting those who are suitable control units left and right regardless of standing. However, this guy is still a rank-and-file soldier, so that speaks for itself.

“Right, right, if you're going to stroke my ass, the least you can do is drink on your own

dime.”

It looks like even the girls at the bar are cold to him. As Christoph slumps his shoulders dejectedly, several women get onto a reasonably nice stage in the center of the bar and start dancing. They weren’t trying to plainly expose their naked bodies, but with the deep cuts in the clothing they were wearing, which shows off lots of skin, and their bold dancing, they were stirring up feelings of lust. Before I knew it, there were girls who are probably prostitutes, wearing the same clothes as the dancers in the corner of the bar, waiting for the men who could no longer control their urges.

“Breasts! Let me see your nipples!! Just a little more and I can see her mound!!”

“.....”

“...how vulgar.”

Even Luna, who doesn’t usually speak ill of people expresses her disdain for Christoph. I’m not one to put on airs either, but it’s pretty horrible this time.

“Uhyooo~~!! What a bouncy ass! Let me suck itt!!”

“Um... Is Viscount Hardlett-sama enjoying himself?”

The bar girl from earlier sits in Cristoph’s seat, which was vacated after he went up close to watch the dancer.

“Yeah, what about it?”

“Thanks for choosing us for tonight. You’ve given my father one month’s worth of sales, which he’s happy about too.”

It’s not like I had any particular reason which prompted me to do so. It just looked like this was the closest place to the palace, after I had received the report.

“You’ve also paid such a large amount in advance, Hardlett-sama is truly a kind noble.”

It’s practically a normal occurrence for a noble to skip out on paying their tabs, especially if they’re expensive. Erich has been lamenting to me that it has been a trend for new nobles who have risen up from the army.

“It’s natural to pay off the alcohol fee. The atmosphere is also quite nice, so there’s no reason to thank me.”

“Woaaah~~~!! I can see her nipples~~~!!”

““ ..... ””

Should I throw this idiot out of here? The prostitutes are calling over the men who are looking lustfully at the dancers one after the other, but are ignoring Christoph. As expected, they also want to choose the man who sleeps with them.

“Heey, Hardlett-sama, there’s a weird person here, so if you’d like, I can give you some special thanks on the second floor too...”

I glance at Luna and she gives me a little nod. It seems she’s way more lenient than Celia when it comes to playing around with other girls and doesn’t mind too much. I place my arm around the bar girl’s waist and she guides me to the stairs that lead up to the second floor.

“...fufu, I actually play around quite a bit. So please taste me plenty, you burly man.”

Just what I wanted.



“Aaaaaah~~~!! It’s so biiiiig!! And harrrrd!! What the heck is this?!! I’m going to dieeee!! Noooo!!”

“I’m not cumming yet. Endure it a little longer.”

“Impossible, not possibleee!! Hiiiiihh! It’s painful, yet feels goood!!”

I grab the hips of the woman who has curled up like a shrimp and thrust violently. She said that she has played around, so her body is quite developed. When I make love to her, her body is sensitive, but her hole is tight. Right now, I’m forcefully spreading her apart and her insides seem to react positively to that, so I thrust deep inside to satisfy her. She isn’t the prettiest girl, but the way she moans and clings to me is cute, so I’ll get a little rougher with her.

“Ah..... aaah... aaau...”

After the girl rocked her hips for a while, she stretched out under me. I'd like to cum about now I guess.

“Hey, I want to cum right about now, is it alright to spray it inside you just like this?”

“aaauuu... feels good... I'm gonna break...”

The girl is speaking incoherently and is unable to make proper conversation. I don't think she's used any contraceptive, but it might be some kind of fate, whatever.

“Uuu”

“.....aaauuuuu”

I fix her hips in place and thrust my meat rod, ejaculating into her. I enter into her depths and push up against her womb as my ejaculation ends, covering her with a blanket for the pillow talk afterwards. Her legs are bow-shaped and she's sticking out her tongue, making her look pretty outrageous. She's endlessly drooling onto the sheets. She probably won't wake up for the next while.

“I'm going back now. You were quite nice.”

I give her a light kiss, and as I descend the stairs, it looks like the party has finished. The men have either returned to the garrison to sleep or gone into some inn with the prostitutes.

“Welcome back. Good work tonight.”

It seems Luna was waiting for me. It makes me feel a little awkward when she says 'good work' after I've slept with another woman.

“Yeah, thanks for waiting. We should get going soon...”

I was about to say we should go back, but something interesting caught my eye.

“...”

There was a small girl silently drinking alcohol in the corner of the slightly messy shop, after the party. If it wasn't somebody I knew, I would have dropped a fist on her and told her that kids need to hurry and go sleep, however, that girl is a fully-fledged adult... if I recall, she should be turning 20.

"Natalie, what are you doing at this time?"

The girl is the wife of the perverted dandy, Andrei. Every time I see her, she doesn't look more than 10 years old.

"Oh, Hardlett-sama... fancy meeting you in a place like this."

"It's the party after our training. I should be asking what you're doing here?"

Natalie looks down without saying anything. It looks like I'll have to hear her out for a bit. I grab a barrel with some liquor remaining and sit beside her. I feel bad for keeping Luna waiting so I gave her some pocket money and send her home. If there's too many people, she wouldn't be able to talk properly.

At first Natalie beats around the bush, but as she gulps her alcohol, she slowly began telling me what she wanted to let out.

"I don't belong at home... That small girl, Lily, has just given birth, and now Aurelia-san has recently started living with us..."

"I think the master is quite head-over-heels for you though."

"Because of that strife we had, he doesn't listen to me much anymore. The other two treat him as a husband and that has driven me away, and not only my husband, but the other kid doesn't listen to me either."

Fumu, so that's why she came to such a far place like this rather than stay at the bar in her house. I can see tears welling up in her eyes. Because she seems so young, it's like a child is crying but the situation is actually quite complicated.

"Are you not able to forgive him? He has... a bit of a preference for young girls, but if you overlook that, he isn't a bad guy."

“At this time, surely...”

Natalie looks down and clams up. This is a bother, but I can't just say 'leave the problems between husband and wife to me'.

“Be brave. If anything happens, I'll be here to help you out.”

I'm doing my best by saying this.

“Really?... You'll help me?”

Natalie crawls onto my chest and looks up at me with tear-filled eyes. Hm? Are things progressing in a weird direction?



“It's fine if you look.”

“...I can?”

The situation has quickly turned on its head, and for some reason, there are two people together in an inn right now. Not to mention, we're both naked and Natalie is covering only the crucial parts with a cloth. I'm sitting on the bed, with everything exposed.

When I glance at Natalie, she shyly unveils the cloth to reveal her breasts and slightly opened slit. She practically has a flat chest, as she has the dark-colored areola that are indicative of wives that have given birth and right in the center are her erect nipples. Her crotch very clearly has no hair, and there are no signs of shaving, so she might not have grown any from the start. Her slit is also just like a thin line of flesh, and although it should appear as though it has given birth, it actually looks like it belongs to a young girl. Even though I'm looking at a naked woman, my cock doesn't get erect.

“This body... doesn't have any sex appeal, right? As I thought, only a pervert could like this body.”

Natalie is about to cry again. I'm ashamed that I made a young girl like this cry. I have no choice but to get it hard.

“Natalie, can you do it with your mouth?”

“Yes... That person has taught me quite a bit.”

I feel a little guilty, but if I were to throw her out now, she might fall prey to some other pervert. I'll steel myself and comfort her.

“Then, I'm counting on you.”

I sit Natalie in between my legs and hold onto my dick. No matter how I look at this, it's like a scene of some pervert, but she's actually 20 years old, so I'll ignore it.

“It's really big... or is it because my husband's is small?”

Natalie holds onto my limp dick with her small hands. Then she caresses it by crawling her tongue over it.

“Is it here?”

“A little lower.”

“Like this?”

“That part's good... Ooh...”

When a woman licks your dick, it'll get hard, regardless of how she looks like. Natalie was given a shock when she saw my dick slowly swelling up.

“I-is there a woman capable of putting something this big in them!?”

All the women I have back home can put it in. However, as expected, I don't know about Natalie.

“Please... let me forget everything.”

Natalie separates her mouth from my dick once she saw it get hard and jumps to my chest. She looks up at me and when her gaze meets mine, she closes her eyes.

“Nnh!”

Our lips meet and our tongues entwine with each other. Her tongue is small like her body, but she's familiar with kissing so she skillfully tangles her tongue with mine and swallows the saliva. After a while of continuous kissing, the both of us separate our lips from each other and Natalie lies on the bed, spreading her legs. It seems she's finally asking for me to penetrate her.

"Relax, 'kay?"

Like picking up small twigs, I hold her thin legs and spread them apart as far as they could go, dripping some of my saliva on her while kissing her genitals. I try to slip a finger to test her hole, but it could barely fit one of my fingers.

In the missionary position, I place my dick at her entrance and push against it. One hand rubs her smooth and slippery skin, while the other one strokes my dick. If I don't continuously give it stimulation, it'll droop because it's going in a child.

"Please don't hold back and slam it into me. Make me forget everything."

"Nnhh..."

I try pushing the tip into her slit but it doesn't look like it will go in. Natalie looks to be in pain as she's biting on the sheets.

"yo-"

I try putting some more strength behind my hips and push one more time. With a squelch, the tip was able to wedge itself slightly inside her hole.

"Agghu!!"

Even with just that, Natalie reaches her limit and let out her voice while biting down on the sheets. If I continue to push in, her hole will expand to match the size of my dick and it won't go back to normal.

"Natalie, remember... back to the time master, no, Andrei, slept with you."

"Wh-what is it, all of a sudden? Put that aside and push it in quickly."



“No, just think back – when he first slept with you, it was the first night you were newlyweds?”

“That’s right... but that kind of thing doesn’t really matter now, does it?”

I hold her waist up in such a way that both of us could see our exposed genitals, even as she was lying on her back.

“If my thing goes in you, this will be completely be an affair. We will be betraying Andrei. He might not want to sleep with you again. Even so, are you fine with this?”

“...recently, he hasn’t been sleeping with me at all anyways.”

“Then I’m going to push it in all the way, you know? Your hole will be spread apart and molded in the shape of my cock. You’re fine with that?”

I go slow just to show her, and slowly bury my meat rod into her. Then I stop pushing my hips, right when I’m about to get the entire tip completely buried into her hole with just a tiny bit more strength. There are signs of unrest and trepidation on Natalie’s face.

“I get it. Natalie, I’ll make you into my woman.”

I grab her slender hips, far stronger than I’ve done up until now and give her premonition of a deep penetration. Natalie places her hand against my chest.

“Nooo!! Stooop!!”

Her powerless arm is insignificant, but I gently separate from her body.

“I don’t want it... I want to remain as Andrei’s wife...”

I sit on the bed and drape the futon over Natalie, who starts sobbing. It went well somehow. If she told me to steal her away, I wouldn’t have known what to do. With this, their relationship as husband and wife might get a little better.

“Here, hurry and put your clothes on and go. I’m sure you didn’t say anything to him so he must be worried sick about you.”

But Natalie doesn't move an inch.

"You've really considered my feelings, didn't you."

I don't sleep with unwilling women, that's all.

"I remembered the feelings Andrei has for me. I'm really thankful for what you did."

Natalie bows her head to me, who was sitting on the bed, then she sits on the bed, stretches my legs out and sits on top of me.

"Hm? What's this about?"

"You can't go out with this thing as it is right? When it's as large as it is, you won't be able to put your clothes back on either."

It looks like Natalie is going to take care of my sexual urges, but when she sits on top of me like this, I can only see it as a child sitting on her father's lap.

"I'll rub it out, 'kay?"

It was like she was sitting on my dick, which has swelled up quite a bit, and then she uses both hands to rub it up and down.

"Ahaha, it's almost as if a penis is growing out of me."

She rubs me quite vigorously in order to get my semen to erupt, causing my dick to twitch, and making Natalie flinch every time it did.

"It's really big, even amongst men, it's unbelievably big, isn't it?"

"I don't know about that. I don't do something as uncomfortable as checking out other men, but I've been told quite a bit that it's big."

"I thought so... since it's even thicker than my arm. So how big would an average man be then?"

I don't know. I don't want to look at any other dick besides my own either.

“Andrei is about this big.”

Natalie shows me her middle finger, then after thinking about it for a little bit, changes it to her index finger. Andrei... so there's such a heart-breaking reason you're sticking to young girls. I am flooded with sadness as my meat rod gets rubbed by Natalie, and it finally reaches the point that it's about ready to explode.

“Wah, it moved. Are you going to cum?”

“Yeah, I'm about to cum. Here it comes-!!”

I unconsciously reach for Natalie's flat chest and pinch her breasts. I thrust my hips up while she's still riding on top and start ejaculating. Even without penetration, the release was relatively forceful for the teasing that was done, and the incredible amount that was released made me feel like I didn't even cum once today.

“Hiiih! The ceiling! It's sprayed everywhere in the room... why did so much come out?”

After some squirting sounds, the room was covered with juices. The semen that flew all the way up to the ceiling dripped back down to the bed, and Natalie was stained with the scent of a man.

“So it shoots out like a fountain...”

I wipe Natalie's dazed face, we put on our clothes and exit the room. The middle-aged woman that came to clean the room screamed when she saw the scene, so we should hurry and get out of there.



“Natalie! You're alright!”

“Andrei... I'm sorry.”

When I send Natalie all the way back to the Hard-boiled Pavilion, Andrei, who was looking around in the area, hugs her. The other two girls look worried as well.

“Be a bit more moderate with your infighting.”

“Thanks for looking after me.”

“Thank you.”

When the married couple lower their heads, my heart feels somewhat troubled. Master only thought that I found the desperately drinking Natalie and escorted her back here, but in reality, I stole her lips, had her lick my meat rod, and also had her help me ejaculate while fully naked. But since there was no real penetration, it wasn't really cheating I guess.

A lot has happened and it's close to dawn when I returned home, but the girls were still waiting for me, though they were almost nodding off. I bury my face in Nonna's giant breasts, and thrust my meat rod all the way into Melissa's throat. Then, I use both hands to fondle Catherine and Rita's breasts. From behind, Luna and Celia are competing to lick my asshole. As I thought, women have to be like this.

It was something I heard from Natalie later, but that night, they had some much-delayed rich sex and the master will get along with and embrace all three of them from now on. The other two don't have experience with men other than Andrei, so they believe that a man's cock is about the size of a finger. I shouldn't mess with his utopia.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Spring.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 3000 At most 6000

Assets: 8700 gold (6400) (Internal Affairs Materials -200) (Labor Cost -400) (Party & Alcohol Fee -50)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Rita (maid?), Catherine (lewd), Melissa, Maria, Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Miti, Alma, Kroll

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Territory: Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Yoguri (just eating meals)

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 52, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 90

## HAUNTED MANSION

---

-Aegir POV-

"A ghost?"

"Yes... the guards came just in case, but it looks like it won't come out when there's a large crowd."

Melissa lies naked beside me. Her entire body was covered in kiss marks and she was basking in the afterglow of our lovemaking.

"It doesn't matter if it's formidable, we can't do anything if we can't see it."

"The family is already scared as it is, and it makes their strange relationships even more awkward..."

This story is regarding the secondhand house that Agor bought. It is a sturdy detached house and relatively cheap but it seems like they got something extra.

"Aegir-san, you're not afraid of ghosts and stuff?"

"Not really."

If a person turns into a ghost when you kill them, then I'm sure I'll have a mountain of them on my shoulder. But I've never seen one to this day, so they probably don't exist. And even if there is one, it won't do anything, so it's fine just to leave it alone. The actual problems are the dirty areas, the rats and the bugs.

"Then why don't you lend your strength to Agor-san?"

Melissa is temporarily the substitute master of the mansion so she has interacted with Agor and the other girls every so often. By the way, it seems the relationship between Agor's women – the widow in the capital and the maid that he brought with him – is pretty bad.

“It’s not like he’s a stranger to me, so I don’t mind... but I don’t have much time.”

Nonna, the others and Leopolt aren’t at the mansion anymore. After the training exercise, I leave the command of the army to Leopolt and have him return to my territory, taking Nonna and the others with him on carriages. There was that earlier incident, but if I leave them in the army, it will be the safest place for them. Since the infantry is with them, their marching speed is slower, so even if I depart at a later date, it’s enough time for me to catch up to them. But with that said, if I take too long and dawdle around, they’ll get mixed up with each other first. Then, it would be annoying to have to split up the mountain nation and the others, and Leopolt will complain to me again.

“It’s fine if it’s only going to be one day. I’ll check on it and if it doesn’t come out, then there’s nothing I can do.”

“I’m sure he’ll be pleased. I told him you are more reliable than calling 20 guards too.”

If you say it that way, I don’t feel as bad. I’ll go tomorrow.

“...so, uhm... could you stop with that now?”

“Hm? What’s wrong?”

“Like I said, Maria is already in such a horrible state...”

My gaze returns to Maria, who was pinned down under me, and she is in an unconscious state, with an expression that shouldn’t be shown to people in public. I was rocking my hips while talking with Melissa, but I might have overdone it a little. So the warm feeling that I felt here and there was actually the squirting of the fainted Maria.

“I guess, I’ll let her rest..... guh!!”

I make the last shakes of my hips the hardest and I hug her body as I pour my seed into the exhausted Maria. While raining kisses on her slovenly face, I massage her petite breasts. The slender body of Maria seems to bounce every time my cock twitches.

“You came lots didn’t you. Maria might actually get pregnant now.”

“I want that to happen quickly-! Woah-!”

“I want to see Carla’s and Mel-san’s children too. Down you go-”

Melissa crawls over and pushes my chest after I ejaculated while I was on top of Maria. After my release finished, my meat rod is still just as hard as I pull out of Maria, dripping with both of our juices. I grab it and push it against Melissa.

By the way, Celia, the only one who remained, is passed out from the alcohol given out at dinner, which was stronger than it looked, as planned by Melissa or perhaps it was simply courtesy on her part. The next day, she was really angry when Melissa came out of my room covered in kiss marks and juices.



### Afternoon of the Appointment

“Is this your new home? It’s a pretty decent house, isn’t it?”

“Yessir! That alone makes it hard for me to give up... sorry to trouble you.”

The house that Agor bought is clearly made for normal citizens to live in, so it isn’t that big, but it’s built with stone and the roof also looks sturdy and it’s located in a considerably high class residential area, where there are other houses in the area made from crude bricks.

“It doesn’t look like it’s an old house based on its appearance. But will it be drenched in blood on the inside?”

“No, the inside is neatly organized as well. Nothing has really been touched yet.”

“Nothing will get solved if we just talk about it endlessly outside the house. Let’s check the inside in person.”

Agor and Celia are with me, so all of us walk in.

When we open the door, it is just like Agor said: there isn’t anything ruinous happening



conspicuously and neither is there blood splashing everywhere. It's a little dusty on the inside, but considering that the house was up for sale, it's not anything odd. When everyone entered the house, the door slams shut loudly behind us. There is some extremely strong wind today, I guess.

"A-Aegir-sama... the door won't open."

"We'll be investigating now, so we shouldn't need to open the door."

Celia is talking about something meaningless. Well, let's go exploring now.

Since all the windows are closed, it's dim inside the house, even though it's daytime. When we try to open them, they get stuck, so we had no choice but to light some lamps.

"Not even one of the windows would open. Isn't the problem with repairing these?"

"The last time I came, they opened without a hitch though..."

".....There are no ghosts here... absolutely no way."

We continue to walk through the short corridor from the entrance, and enter the kitchen. It was nicely cleaned in there, and a pretty little table was placed there.

"Oh, so you've already put some furniture here? When we're finished, why don't we make something light and eat together?"

I just joke lightly, but Agor's response is dull.

"...I haven't put anything in yet. There wasn't anything like this yesterday."

As if I couldn't believe him, I look again, but the table isn't there and there are spider webs stuck around the stove.

"Hm, how strange. I thought everything was tidied up... I guess there's nothing here, so let's go to the next room."

"Ri-right."

".....I didn't see anything here. Even if I did, I'm probably mistaken."

When we continue towards the living room, there is a worn out table and chair. Along the wall, there is a large, outstanding portrait and an old candlestick. The portrait looks a little eerie, but it's way better than the thing that Claudia gave me.

"The furniture is pretty damaged, huh."

"I've tried to replace them... but I couldn't."

He couldn't? If it's only this much I could toss it out myself. I try sitting on the chair but it didn't creak and seems like it can still be used. I was going to say that it would be fine if he just left it there, but the room suddenly lit up.

"Woah!"

"Hihih!!"

The candlestick is lit. Now, we don't have to bother bringing lamps everywhere with us.

"So you brought a candle with you? We wouldn't be able to see much if we just had these lamps and it would be quite problematic."

"I didn't light them... Plus, just one candle wouldn't make the room this bright."

".....Nooo... nooo"

It's true that it's pretty bright for one candle but it's pretty nice for how bright it is. When I look closer, there is a nice big candle placed. I look around the room but I couldn't really find anything in particular regarding a ghost.

"Oh, thanks for bringing the chair over."

"The chair moved by itself..."

"....."

I sit down and stretch on the chair that unexpectedly came by my feet, but Agor is turning pale and Celia is trembling. It's rare to see Celia like this, but it's pretty cute to

see how she's scared of ghosts, even though she's gotten used to being in battle.

"Let's go to the bedroom next."

There is no bed in the relatively large bedroom, and is quite bare-looking. There is a thing that looks like a dressing table, but the mirror was cracked so it probably can't be used anymore. Celia's back becomes straight and rigid, and she clings to me tightly.

Then, a loud banging sound comes from the wall of the room. Everyone turns their attention to the origin of the noise, and the banging continued three more times. Agor pulls out his sword and looks around, while Celia remains clinging to me.

"You're overreacting, maybe it's a bird or something."

"For all four times it was a bird!?"

"Then maybe some bad kid in the neighborhood threw a rock or something. Just spank him later."

After saying that, I turn towards Celia.

"Wh-what's up...?"

"Hm, just my imagination. I thought there was a girl reflected in the mirror behind you, but I was wrong."

"Uwaaaaa!!"

Celia flinches and jumps into my chest. She is quick to jump, but she's overreacting. I told you I was mistaken... hm? Something's there again. It looks like a head is hanging, but because it's still bright outside, my eyes aren't used to the dark and I couldn't really tell.

"So this place is fine too, you might have been imagining things since you get unexpectedly nervous when moving to a new place."

"Why is that!? All the rooms are bad!!"

Celia shouts loudly. Though, there's nothing I can do unless it shows itself in front of

my face. I brought my Dual Crater just in case of the possibility of a mean-spirited monster, but I can't cut something I can't see.

"I know it won't come out when there's a lot of people after it, but if even four people is too much, then there's almost nothing we can do."

"When the guards were here, we could open the windows and nothing strange happened at all."

"Well, I guess there's really nothing here. Let's go home now."

Agor makes a troubled face, while Celia wants to go home.

"We made the effort to come all the way here. Let's check all the rooms."

The remaining rooms are the bedroom, and the three guestrooms. We should split up and quickly search all of them.

"No way!! I'm not leaving Aegir-sama!!"

Celia clings onto me and doesn't let go.

"Don't say that. Agor's women aren't scared. Someone as strong as you shouldn't have anything to be frightened about."

"...eh?"

"...What do you mean by my women?"

"What are you saying? I mean the woman you brought along with you, like that widow? Her complexion doesn't look that well, but you're feeding her properly, right?"

She's been closely following behind you from the start.

"M-my women said that until the ghost has been dealt with, they absolutely wouldn't come in this house though..."

"Be-behind you..."

The two of them turn around slowly and their gazes meet with that woman. As a kind of courtesy, the woman smiles.

“Owaaaah—!!”

“Gyaaaaa—!!”

Agor jumps back and hits his head, Celia froths at the mouth and faints on the spot. No matter what it is, that’s a little rude, don’t you think? I was going to apologize and talk to her a little but, before I knew it, the woman appears behind me.

(Go home, get out.)

Even though I couldn’t hear anything, I could register the voice. It was an odd feeling. The woman’s face distorts unseemingly and I could see feelings of resentment and hate. Oh, I see. This is the ghost.

(Kill, kill, hate, kill.)

The voice that echoes in my head turns into some meaningless curses. When I look closely, her distorted face is actually not too shabby-looking and although her skin is a pale blue, her style is decent. Her clothes are being lifted up by her breasts, so she’s got quite the pair of tits.

“Don’t warp your face like that, it’ll ruin your beauty.”

(Hate, hate, I’ll kill you.)

The woman instantly approaches me with a distorted face and places her hands around my throat. She grins broadly while squeezing my throat.

If that was a man, I would take him down, but unfortunately if it’s a woman, she isn’t strong enough to strangle me to death. I feel an instance of pain, but when I braced myself, it wasn’t much. Looks like this ghost doesn’t have the physical ability to strangle me.

“Fumu...”

I try to place my hand on the ghost’s shoulder but I couldn’t grab it properly and there

was a vague feeling of touching it. I am able to touch it somewhat.

I grab the shoulder of the woman with a demonic appearance and pull her in for a kiss. Ooh, it certainly felt like I touched her.

(gh-!!!??)

The woman nimbly put some distance between us. She has a face which tells me she couldn't understand what was going on. It was a prettier face than her warped face.

"If you make that face, there's nothing to be scared about."

(Be quiet!)

I'm able to properly make conversation with her, so this time I'll go over and try kissing her even more.

(Don't come!)

The woman passes through the walls to escape, but it seems she can't get outside of the house. In such a small house, she can't run away forever, and I was finally able to grab her hand in one of the bedrooms. As I thought, she is quite the beauty when I look closely. If she tidies up her hair, she'll be even prettier.

(C-curse you! Nmu!)

I grab her so that she can't phase through the walls and kiss her repeatedly while stroking her breasts and ass. Yep, because of this strange phenomenon, I can't really tell. But fortunately, there's a bed in this room. We can take our time and chat.

I push the woman onto the bed and caress her face while continuing to kiss her. The ghost is sending curses of resentment into my head, but when I kiss her for a while, she stops saying anything. When I separate my lips from her, she no longer tries to run away.

"Well, can you tell me why you became a ghost now?"

With her ruffled hair still covering her face, she once again transmits her voice into my head.

(Abandoned... betrayed... hung... can't leave.)

In summary, she was the daughter of a relatively prosperous family, who fell in love with a certain man. However, that man was targeting her family's fortunes and when the family that supported her went bankrupt, he quickly abandoned her, causing her to commit suicide in this house from the despair and guilt. After that, she was bound by her own grudge, and it seems she couldn't leave this house.

(Recently, I've begun to lose myself. If this continues, I'll turn into a monster.)

At first, she had a completely human consciousness and wouldn't scare people meaninglessly, but it seems that lately, she has been in a trance and didn't know what she was doing herself. The shock from my kiss brought her back to her senses.

(Erase me with that sword.)

The woman stretches her hand to the Dual Crater. When the blade was pulled from the sheath just a little bit, the hand that touches it starts to get inflamed like she was burnt. Since the Dual Crater is made of mithril, it has the power to drive away demons. I didn't know that it works on ghosts too though...

(I want to disappear before I turn into a monster.)

I remember hearing about how the ghost of a person that died with a grudge will turn into an annoying monster if they possess hatred for a long time. This woman will probably follow the same sequence of events. But it would be a waste if I were to just erase a pretty lady like this.

The woman is wearing a tattered one-piece dress and she had the distinct remnants of the rope around her neck. I guess she kept the look from the time she committed suicide.

"Alright. I'll pierce through you... could you let me know your name though?"

(Casie.)

Casie lays sideways on the bed and closes her eyes. As she awaits her final moment, she has a very human-like smile on her face. I adjust my positioning and instantly

pierce through the girl.

(—!! What are you doing?!!!)

The Dual Crater is still standing next to the bed, while I take out my meat rod, flip up the edge of her dress and insert myself into Casie's crotch.

"As I thought, it's an airy sensation indeed. But it isn't too bad."

(Pu-pull it out! Why?! This is rape! I'll sue you!)

Casie is making a fuss inside my head but this makes her seem more like a human than she was before. I talk to her while continuing to shake my hips.

"It's sad to see you disappear while only knowing a man who chose money over a beauty like you."

(That is different from this! I'm definitely not going to accept this!!)

The girl definitely had a personality that hated losing when she was alive.

"I'm already inside you, so it can't be helped. At least tell me where it feels best for you."

(... uuu-, the shallow area near the entrance... )

"Leave it to me."

I make bare the woman's chest and fondle her large tits while slowly rocking my hips. I only realize now, but the translucent body that only pertain to ghosts make it possible for me to see through her and see the cock that pierced her. Coupled with the distinctive feeling of being touched gently, it made for a mysterious sensation. When I try putting some force behind my hips, my dick sticks out of her, like it pierces through her stomach. It appears that her body is made of something that's soft and gentle.

(What is this log?! Don't tell me, it's your cock!?)

I smile as I kiss her and continue fucking her. The girl continuously cries out 'I'm being raped' and 'what a cruel man', but she wraps her arms and legs around me as if trying



to envelope me. Normally, I would try not to be too rough on girls so I wouldn't break them, but if it's this girl, I don't have to hold back, thus I move my hips to my heart's content.

(How rough... it's incomparable to how he used his hips.)

The stimulation is weaker than when I embrace other girls so it takes some time, but I am finally able to reach my climax.

"Casie, forget about your previous lover and become my woman. That way, you'll also forget your grudge."

(Putting aside that this is rape, you're asking me to become your woman?..... but I don't dislike that manly part of yours. Fine, I'll become your woman.)

"I'm about to cum...! Cumming!!"

(... Do it whenever you're ready.)

"Uooh!!"

I want to push myself into Casie's depths but because her body is translucent, that part doesn't exist. The sperm that ejects from my dick passes through her body and splashes on the bed and the wall. I'll keep this a secret from Agor.

(Wow... there's so much, I'll get pregnant.)

While thinking that it wouldn't be possible for her, I collapse on the bed after releasing my semen. It is really dusty, so I choke a little.

(Heey... why don't you just die here? If you're with me, I won't become a monster.)

"Don't be ridiculous. If I die here, I'll hold a grudge."

(But, I won't be able to leave this place... and now I won't disappear either. I want to be with you.)

She just has to get out, what a strange girl. I pull Casie's hand, throw open the front doors and walk outside. There, she is able to get out without any resistance at all.

(I'm out... I got out!! How long has it been... the sun's rays.)

Casie flies around filled with deep emotions... flying around?

"Gyaaaaa!!"

The middle-aged woman walking outside keels over and starts foaming at the mouth. We should probably have her come outside only at night.

"Now, you can live freely... or not, since you're already dead I guess. Anyways, you can freely do as you please. So, what will you do?"

(It has already been decided. I will... follow you forever!!)

With this, the ghost incident at Agor's new house is resolved. He is very thankful, but it seems that those people who could see Casie could see her quite clearly – when I bring her home with me, Miti and Alma wet themselves, and Melissa and Maria just tilts their heads. Celia glares at me with teary-eyes as well, so I had no choice but to keep her in the basement storage. She was alone for such a long time already, so abandoning her for several months is nothing to her.

After that, I was going to take her with me when I returned to the territory, but just before my departure.

"She's going together with you, right? She's not going to stay in the house, right!?"

Miti and Alma are pleading desperately to me, so I call out to her.

"You here?"

(I'm over here.)

"" ..... ""

You wet yourselves again?

"Geez, peeing yourself in public like this..."

Celia, you did that in a major way when you were in Agor's house too. If I recall, you wet your short pants and fainted.

"So, shall we return to the territory?"

"Yessir!"

(Yeah)

Casie clings to me from behind as I ride Schwartz. He neighs happily. You're fine with ghosts too? What an indiscriminate perverted horse.

"It was quite bothersome this time! ... By the way, there was some smelly fluid sticking on the bedroom walls. Is that something left from dealing with the ghost too?"

Let's move on.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Spring.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 500 At most 6000

Assets: 8100 gold (6200) (Internal Affairs Materials -200) (Labor Cost -400)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Rita (maid?), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Yoguri (just eating meals), Casie (phantom)

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 53, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 91

## MONSTER EXTERMINATION

---

-Aegir POV-

I bring Celia and one more person with me and when we return to the territory, Carla and Mel are waiting for me, with their strength completely restored.

"Here, let's have papa carry you."

"Hey, don't bite your papa's fingers."

"Antonio, it's dirty outside the carpet, so if you're going to crawl, do it on the carpet."

I hold Ekaterina, Carla's daughter, while getting my finger bitten by Miu, Mel's daughter, and watch over Catherine's son, Antonio, who's crawling around on all fours. To think that all of these guys come from my seed, it's such a strange feeling.

(How cute.)

"Something feels tingly... like something's around my shoulder."

Carla turns around and twists her head back. It seems like Casie is resting her chin on Carla's shoulder while watching the baby. It appears that those who can't see her are completely unable to see her. I wonder what the exact criteria are.

(It appears scaredycats and detail-oriented people are able to see me.)

I see, it seems I'm an unexpected coward.

(You're a special one, to be able to touch me... and even rape me, it's not something that anybody else can do.)

What are you talking about, since you accepted me in the end, it's consensual. But it's true that those who are concerned with the fine details can see her. Celia could clearly see her, and it looks like Miti and Alma could see her as well. When we came back

home, I believe Leopolt and Sebastian also stared at her. That reminds me, I haven't shown Adolph yet. Maybe I'll give him a scare at night.

(I'm not a toy.)

It's just a prank. In any case, it's very convenient to be able to communicate just by thinking about it.

"Aegir-sama! It's fine to play with the kids, but what about my new dress....."

Nonna barges in wearing a dress which greatly emphasizes the protrusion of her giant breasts. She's unhappy that I didn't pay attention to her. Umu, it's nice that her tits are prominent, but if she shows this to other men, I'll get jealous.

"What's wrong Nonna? Don't just stand there, come sit over here."

(This person can see me.)

"Gyowaaaah!! Afhuhn"

She tries to run away, but the heavy-footed Nonna trips. Then, her breasts acts as a cushion to soften her landing. She falls forward, but it doesn't look like she's injured.



"...so that's how things are. Things sort of happened and she came along."

(Nice to meet you.)

"She said nice to meet you."

Casie's words could not be heard by those who couldn't see her, so Celia is speaking as her proxy.

"She says nice to meet you?! It's a ghost, you know!? She's see-through, you know?!"

Nonna is making a huge fuss, while the other girls are staring in puzzlement. It's natural to be confused if I told them there's a ghost they can't see but should treat well. Celia got used to Casie on the way home, and she didn't oppose communicating with

her either. I should have embraced both of them at the same time

“...by the way, Aegir-sama has slept with her.”

(You’re making me blush.)

“You fucked a ghost!? What on earth were you thinking?!”

“I can’t see her though.”

“She’s a beauty then, eh?”

“I guess anything’s possible if it has a hole.”

As I thought, I can’t properly introduce her if they can’t see.

“Casie, is there somehow you can make yourself visible?”

(Umm, when I was more of a vengeful ghost, many people could see me. Let me try it.)

Casie puts a hand to her head and starts mumbling something.

(I was abandoned by that man... despair... my neck... from the chair... it was painful... revenge... hate... )

Casie’s face distorts and traces of rope appear around her neck. Her eyes open wide and the color drains from her skin. The girls’ faces start getting paler and paler by the second. It appears that she was able to successfully make herself visible.

(I am here!)

“”””Gyaaaah!!!””””

“”””Biieeeeeeh!!””””

The girls scream and the babies start crying. Mel curls up like a turtle to protect the kids, and Rita falls over on the table, spilling the contents of the teapot everywhere. The cup that Carla instantly threw misses its mark and hits Catherine, while Nonna faints on the spot, falling head first to the floor, though Celia somehow manages to

hold her steady.

It became a scene from hell. In the mania, I kiss Casie until she is able to return to her original form, while all the girls run to the toilet. There are several wet stains in the shape of a butt slowly spreading on the floor.

In the end, Casie's visualization was rejected by all the girls, and used the fact that she is able to hold things to get her to always walk around while carrying a large stuffed toy. Casie gladly accepted the suggestion and the eerie feeling when she is unknowingly by our sides disappeared.

At first, the servants felt creeped out by the stuffed toy floating around in the mansion, but there were no bad intentions from her, so everyone gradually got used to it.

However, if that stuffed toy was taken away, it was believed that the person who removed it would see a nightmare of a woman standing by the bedside repeating 'give it back, give it back', so it became an unspoken rule not to touch it.

Casie's case was a riot, but after that, there was nothing much to do besides development and training; days passed by ordinarily.



One month later

"Aaah!!"

"Uooh!!"

I hold Carla down and slam my meat rod into her all the way up to the root. After giving birth, the entrance of Carla's womb expanded and I can push myself in there if I shove my meat rod in.

"Aah... that's good! I'm still cumming!"

"Amazing... not even a single drop spilled... if you pour it in directly and it accumulates in there, I'll definitely get pregnant..."

Carla's belly expands like she was pregnant as I release her. Copious amounts of milk



squirt from both of her breasts, and a sweet smell drifts from the bed.

“What a waste.”

“Aauh! If you suck it that much, Ekaterina’s portion will-... I guess I can squirt as much as I want, huh.”

Carla and Mel both squirt plenty of milk from their breasts. If it was only given to the children, their breasts would be quite stiff, so I’m drinking it everyday.

“Mel’s also feeling pain from them being stiff, so drink from her too, kay?”

“Yeah, I’ll do it tomorrow during mealtime, since I tend to forget if I don’t call her to my bed.”

“Well that’s because Aegir fucked her mercilessly. It’s horrible, getting pregnant again just half a year after she gave birth.”

Mel’s period has stopped, so I’m holding back on having sex with her just in case. Based on what she tells me she feels like, it appears as though she’s pregnant again.

“Mel’s also amazing. She’s already 38... but I guess there are girls like her who get pregnant easily.”

I roughly knew which day it happened. A little while back, when I had nothing to do and was drinking during the day and wanted a woman to go along with it, Mel walked into the room and wanted me to suck on her breasts because they were stiff.

Of course it didn’t end after I sucked her breasts, but I pounded her with all my strength and ejaculated countless times while my meat rod was in her womb. I was also drunk and slept on top of Mel after that, so my cock acted as the stopper for a large amount of seed that caused her belly to swell, and the semen remained in her for the whole night.

“Heey, don’t thinking about Mel when you’re on top of me! I’m probably going to be joining her soon anyways!”

“You can tell when my seed is coming out?”

“Of course I can. Something this big... but it’s not just the size that’s amazing, but also how rock hard it is. It’s so rugged that I can tell when you put that thing in me...”

Carla strokes her belly slowly.

“It became incomparably bigger than when you first fucked me, and it’s gotten so dark from sucking up all the womanly juices. It’s a giant, veteran dick no matter how I see it.”

She’s saying something pleasant. Both of us hug each other and give each other kisses all over our faces repeatedly.

If I flirt around with Carla, she lets out a happy-sounding voice. With that said though, she isn’t Casie. She isn’t that strong at night so when it gets dark, she goes to sleep.

“.....”

At the side of the bed, Nonna looks down at me and Carla flirting while connected to each other. The expression she has is way scarier than Casie’s was.

“You girls are able to get pregnant left and right, so why am I not able to?!”

Nonna leaps and jumps onto the bed. Her gigantic breasts cover us.

“Your boobs are heavy! Isn’t it ‘cuz you don’t have any eggs?!”

“Be quiet! Then I should constantly be connected with him for one week. If his man-juices accumulate inside my womb forever, then I’ll get pregnant for sure!!”

To always be connected to Nonna and to live while carrying her around? That sounds interesting, but rumors will spread of us being a perverted married couple.

“Your seed~~!! Give me your seed pleasee~~!!”

Nonna pushes me down and gets on top, ready to ride me, but Carla pranks her by shifting my meat rod slightly so that it thrusts up her ass, thus causing my beloved wife to be troubled with slathering ointment in her anus later.



“Let’s leave the army reinforcement at that for now. Although it is for the short term, any more than that and it will exceed our ability to maintain them. Hereafter, we will improve their combat ability by means of training.”

Pretty much all of the equipment have been distributed so it’s perfect.

“The spring head tax has generally been collected from everyone. However, I couldn’t take from the citizens who moved in from last autumn till now, so they have been exempted. According to calculations, it wouldn’t have been much income anyway.”

I wasn’t expecting much in the first place. The harvest this year around might turn out well though.

“So, what are you trying to say?”

“We are not in any particular rush to achieve any targets. Perhaps because of their own volition as well, Treia will have no reason to come attack us as long as there isn’t any movement in the capital.”

“It’s the same with domestic affairs, and there are not many changes besides labor progressing on flood control and maintenance of the highway.... That company is annoyingly bugging us to construct a path from Rafen to the iron mine.”

“It looks like the construction of Claire’s company building has been finished as well. I see her often, but is she staying in there?”

I don’t remember the name of her company. Just a bit earlier, I called it the Flitchen company but Adolph told me that it’s fine if I refer to it as ‘that company’.

“No, she’s too busy and is always in and out.”

It can’t be helped that she has to come to such a hard-to-reach place countless times. If something comes up, it’ll be fine if she just comes when I call her.

But I have a wonderful amount of nothing to do. It’s fine to be free, but occasionally, I want to do something too.

“Alright, I’ll go train-”

“Please don’t. It would be more troublesome if you injure people.”

“Then I’ll go inspect the flood control-”

“Please don’t. If you selfishly give out some special reward, it will throw everything into chaos.”

These guys are so irritating. That’s fine, I’ll just go find Celia or Pipi to pet.



I find Pipi, rest her on top of my lap and massage her face to heal my spirit, when a certain corner of the city starts to get restless. As I thought about whether some sort of incident happened, I continue to stroke Pipi’s nape, figuring that Adolph will probably sort it out.

“Chief~ it feels kinda tingly.”

It’s really nice that Pipi, who’s still a child, has tanned skin which is smooth and comfortable to touch. I want to feel it forever. However this bliss would not last for long. Adolph, who I recently parted with, came into the room.

“Hardlett-sama, an express messenger has arrived just now from the southern village. It seems like they are being attacked by monsters.”

“Fumu, I see.”

That’s not unusual. We did some mass cleaning in the territory in the beginning, but the insignificant monsters and bandits are like small flies that can instantly get excited. It would be impossible to constantly check the entirety of such a vast territory, so we can only crush them as soon as they show themselves. It’s for that reason that the soldiers exist anyways, and the entire village can become a vigilante corps.

“It seems they are asking us to deploy soldiers since there are a lot of them, several people have been killed, and when they thought they were somehow defeated, more would come, as if there’s a nest nearby or something.”

Fumu, it's something that the vigilante corps are unable to handle, and if people died, then this might be something considerably powerful. If I don't act quick, they'll increase in number.

"Tell Leopolt and have him send several dozen sold-..... scratch that. Just quickly deploy the troops."

The village that alerted us is a new village so it's close to Rafen, only being one day's distance on horse. I give Pipi's head a light 'pat, pat' and stand up. It looks like this will be a nice way to kill some time.

"...Should I let Leopolt-dono know first?"

I let his sigh roll off my back as I put on my armor and hum while picking up my spear.

"It's been so long since I've fought together with the chief. Pipi can also take care of monsters. I'll do my best."

Pipi's coming with me as well... but don't undress in front of Adolph, and put some underwear on.



The next day

"It'll only be a few days. You don't have to force yourself to come, you know?"

I find Celia amongst the gathered armor-wearing soldiers, who seems to have followed along. Celia, who has her hand in many different things, should also have other duties to attend to though.

"There is no duty more important than attending to Aegir-sama! And also..."

She glances at Pipi, who I'm playing around with.

"If I let the two of you go alone, when you come back, Pipi won't be a virgin anymore. Aegir-sama can't be left alone with a child."

My thing won't even fit in Pipi. Well, maybe if it's just the tip, I can manage somehow...

Celia said the two of us would be alone, but that is only regarding household members, when in reality, Celia and I are in front of about 50 cavalry from the private army. I'm not so foolish as to ride in with just three people as the reinforcement. And if I only bring this many on my own, it shouldn't interfere with Leopolt's training either.

"I see it. It's that village."

Celia is about to pop a blood vessel from my fooling around with Pipi, but she points at the scene in front. Although it's supposed to be close, it took us an entire day just to get here on horse, so I thought we could take a break for a bit, but it seems that won't be possible.

"Protect the right!"

"One of them got in, deal with it!"

"The women should also grab something!"

The fire alarm is ringing throughout the village and the villagers are gathering on the perimeter with hoes and axes to fight the group of goblins. It was far away so I don't know the details, but I can tell that they aren't having an easy time.

"All units, get into formation to charge."

The well-trained units of the private army get into formation in the blink of an eye. But I don't even wait for that and charge forward by myself.

"Shit, there's too many of them!"

"If this continues..."

In front of me are three people getting suppressed by ten goblins, so I'm literally cutting in between them. In the midst of intermittent dull fighting sounds, a loud sound resonates.

"Schwartz, send them flying!"

In response to my voice, Schwartz tramples one goblin with its hoof, and kicks away

two more with its legs. At the same time, I take a large swing with my spear, instantly removing the top halves of three of them. While the villagers and goblins are stunned, I raise the spear above my head and swing it down on to crush the remaining two, turning them into smashed figs.

Goblins are small monsters just 1 m in length and only have enough intelligence to know how to flock together. If you're properly equipped, they're nothing to be scared of.

"Look out behind you!"

"Giiih!!"

The villagers shout. One of the remaining goblins jumps at me on horseback. I'm thankful that it cried out to make things easier for me.

"Fuuun!"

I spin my spear with both hands and smack the goblin with all my strength using the handle. It makes a slightly soft and light-sounding noise, and the small monster flew away like a pebble, easily flying over the wooden stakes temporarily setup around the village and landing right in the middle. The women in the village scream, but I don't think it could survive that. Although these things really fly far.

After I massacred the ten goblins, Celia and the army she was commanding caught up to us, cleaning up the goblins which were able to push through to other areas of the village. The fighting strength of spear cavalry wielding over 2 m long spears is worlds apart from that of farmers equipped with hoes and axes. Most of the goblins were killed before they were able to inflict any damage, and the few remaining monsters dropped their wooden spear-like objects and fled into the southern woods.

"You don't need to chase them! Keep watch of the perimeter of the village!"

Celia's clear voice guides the soldiers as they move to surround the village, making sure they haven't let any sneak past them.

"It's the feudal lord's army! We're saved-!!"

"He's actually here himself too."

“Now we can rest assured.”

The women and children hiding in the houses are coming out one after the other and cheering. But even if we defeat all the enemies who came to attack the village, it doesn't get us anywhere. We'll need to chase them into the woods and destroy the nest...

“The sun's already setting. Shall we fight them after we rest for the night?”

The soldiers sigh in relief. It seems they really disliked having to fight after walking a full day to get here. I'll just listen to the report about the casualties and the types of monsters and call it a night.



“What marvelous accomplishments on this occasion, and to think the feudal lord himself would do so...”

“Thanks is unnecessary. Just tell me the number of casualties and the details of those things.”

Destroying several goblins is nothing to boast about.

The representative of the village... a man I've seen somewhere before started to speak.

“There are six dead, ten heavily injured and unable to move, and also... three women who became sacrifices.”

Considering the population of the village doesn't even reach a hundred people, it can be considered a severe loss.

“The vigilante corps should have been equipped with weapons and armor, so why were there so many casualties? Did a large monster appear?”

“No, there have been slightly large specimens before but they were only goblins. However, they had unbelievable numbers and the attack which caused the greatest amount of casualties had several hundred of them swarming us.”



Fumu, an adult man can win against a goblin even without knowing martial arts. But if a single man has to face several opponents at once, they would need a relative amount of equipment and skill. So it isn't possible with the vigilante corps that only has a few members at best.

"I still don't understand. Goblins surge out like little insects, but for such a large army to appear so quickly like this..."

Celia is also wracking her brain. If such a large group exists, we would have realized when we were doing a sweep of the territory a while ago. Does that mean the few remaining ones we couldn't catch were able to become such a large army in just two years?

"In any case, we have equipped and experienced soldiers. If we remain calm, we shouldn't be too late. We will step foot into the woods and destroy the nest tomorrow as planned."

"Alright, I'll let the soldiers know."

Celia quickly gets up and is ready to leave.

"Do you know the location of the nest?"

"No... we were kept on the defense the whole time after all, so we had no luxury to search for their base."

I guess that's also true. Well, when we step into the woods, I'm sure they'll come greet us.

At that moment, a sharp piercing scream of a woman came from the house next door.

"Nooooo!! Kill me! Just kill me alreadyyy!!"

We went out to check what was going on. The other villagers are gathering as well.

Inside the house, the woman is screaming and struggling while a man that looks like her husband is desperately trying to comfort her. Maybe he lost his temper at the end, but he pushes her down and is covering her mouth.

“What’s going on?!”

The woman’s attitude is too ghastly for it to be a lover’s quarrel. The husband lets go of the woman in a hurry, and the woman is about to make a fuss again but remains quiet after I give her a harsh stare. The representative of the village behind me whispers in my ear.

“The woman was slow in running away from the previous attack, and got her child killed. Moreover, the woman herself got gangraped by several of the goblins... that’s why she went crazy.”

“...so that’s what you meant by three women becoming sacrifices.”

For things like goblins to be able to fuck women, they’re enjoying quite the luxury. It makes me feel like cleaning them up more and more. For now, I’ll comfort the woman and leave the area, but I still have a ton of questions.

“They should be monsters that prioritize hunger over their lust. For them to rape the women and not eat them up is a little strange.”

“That might be true. Then we would have to rescue the three women somehow from the nest they carried them to after raping them.”

“If they were normal goblins, they would have stabbed the women repeatedly and killed them before carrying them to their nest as food.”

Goblins are just small monsters about 1 m in size. Even if the women are weak, if they struggled, it would make it very difficult for them to be carried off. It’s obvious they would be killed first.

“I’m sorry. I didn’t consider that due to my shallow thinking.”

“Fumu...”

Maybe it wasn’t a good idea to bring Pipi and Celia along with me. If I was going to bring anybody, it might have been better to bring Mack and Christoph. Against that musclehead, the goblins will lose their lustful desires, and if Christoph manages to get raped in the butt, it might be a little pitiful, but that’s not a big deal.



“If Casie was here, then we could have asked her to take a look.”

Actually, just before we departed from Rafen, I asked her to take a look ahead of us. But regardless of the considerable time that passed, she was at the front of the city walls when it was time for us to head out. The speed at which she is able to hover around and glide through the sky is no different from the walking speed of an average girl, and when the wind blows, it brings her back to where she started.

(There is head wind and I can’t advance forward.)

She is more like a kite than a ghost. It couldn’t be helped so I got on my horse and thought of having her come with us, but she said that camping outside would be dark and scary and her back would hurt, and unless it would be in a hooded carriage, she wouldn’t go. The slight remnants of the rope around her neck would also affect the soldiers’ morale so I abandoned hope of bringing her with me. It’ll be quite difficult to get her to help us out during night raids.

“They’re just a bunch of goblins, so we can manage something if we rely on our strength.”

“Please try your best to be careful, ‘kay?”

“Even if they’re goblins, if you let your guard down, you’ll die!”

“Alright, alright.”

I brush off Celia and Pipi’s warnings and get onto the floor. The battle is tomorrow.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Summer.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 500 At most 6000

Assets: 7200 gold (5900) (Internal Affairs Materials -300) (Labor Cost -600)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Yoguri (just eating meals), Casie (ghost)

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 53, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 92

## DEN OF MONSTERS

---

**-Aegir POV-**

The following day after we arrived at the village tormented by monsters, we head to the southern woods, which was believed to contain the nest of the goblins.

“It’s really close, isn’t it? It was pointless no matter how many times the goblins got defeated.”

It’s exactly as Celia says. The distance between the village and the woods is short, even on foot. On horse, it would be so quick that we wouldn’t even have time to eat.

“The nest is this close, yet nobody realized its presence until such a large army was formed?”

“They must have propagated too quickly...”

A goblin, who appears to be a lookout, comes out frequently from a bush to take a peek and is about to run away, but Pipi shoots it to death as if it was target practice. To Pipi, who regularly hunts animals that move quickly such as wolves and deer, the ugly goblin that ran bow-legged was not even moving.

“That’s number three!”

“Good going, when we get back, I’ll pet you as many times as the number you shot.”

Pipi’s efforts really helps us successfully reach the woods before their army appears.

“Aegir-sama, what shall we do? There isn’t much plant-life so it wouldn’t be impossible for us to enter the forest on our horses...”

Unlike the plains, the woods is a place we have to be careful of what’s above and below us and the cavalry’s ability to deal with that is somewhat inferior. Although it may just be the woods, with trees scattered about, it doesn’t look like we’ll be able to gallop at

full speed.

“No, we’ll continue on our horses. Our opponents are goblins after all, so our horses will give us the height advantage.”

The height of a goblin is 1 m. As long as we are careful about attacks from the trees, they won’t be able to put their hands on the cavalry. And even if they aim for our horses, we can still fight as infantry.

“I understand. Everyone, enter the woods on your horses! Move in a column at a fast pace!”

There are only 50 of them, but the sound of their hooves is quite pronounced. Even the goblins, who don’t have sharp senses, won’t be able to miss it. I thought that a large army would show up soon, but there wasn’t much noticeable change in the situation.

“I thought the woods would be filled with goblins but that is unexpectedly not the case.”

We found several of them who were trying to run away earlier, but it’s nothing like the hundreds of goblins that the village chief mentioned.

“Yes, it’s strangely quiet.”

“That’s weird. There aren’t any birds or animals either... it’s like this place is dead.”

Pipi has an uneasy look. Because Schwartz is taller than the other horses, a branch slaps me in the face, causing Celia to draw her sword on reaction to the sound. It seems she can’t settle down either.

“Ouch... Schwartz, lower your body more when you walk.”

Schwartz snorts as if telling me not to ask for the impossible. Geez, I’ve been with this guy for such a long time already, you would think that he would take care of me a little more. This spring, you were the one who got the horses for the carriage at the mansion pregnant, right? I thought it was strange how they were so attached to you, but you just work fast.

“Giiih!!”

There is a sudden nasty cry and a dark clump comes falling down from the trees. When I look carefully, I see a goblin holding a spear, made from slicing the tip of a stalk of bamboo.

“It really helps when you cry like that.”

I skewer the thing that jumped down from the trees in mid-air and fling it away behind me.

“Gyiiihh-!”

Taking that as the signal, goblins start jumping off the trees to attack us from all directions.

“Maintain your formation! Ten in the front and the rest will alternate to deal with the ones on the left and right, on the double!”

It is within our expectations to get ambushed in the forest so we didn’t panic. If we stood still, we would get surrounded and be at a disadvantage, but if we remained on the move with our horses, it would be impossible for the goblins to catch up to us with their short legs. The ones in the vanguard trample over the ones blocking the path in front and the soldiers in the middle of the squad pierce through the ones coming at them one after the other.

“Just roughly over 100, huh? These numbers are totally not enough.”

“Yes, these ones probably came out after reacting to the noise. The majority of them must be near the nest.”

Celia speaks while swinging her sword, splitting open the small monsters’ heads and slicing open their stomachs. Pipi is also loosing her arrows quickly from close range. At first glance, she seems like a sweet little girl, but you can clearly see she’s accustomed to this.

“Hoitto”

I pierce through the head of a goblin with my spear and lift it up. In the same manner, I skewer the second one that appears. The last one is slightly larger and is holding a

shield, but I stab through the goblin, shield and all, making it the third dumpling on my stick.

“Chief, if there are this many of them, there might also be a tougher hobgoblin out there...”

“There’s something amazing like that out there?”

Pipi pauses, but Celia continues on.

“It’s probably the one at the tip of your spear...”

“This one? I thought it was strange that it was larger than the others and wearing armor.”

I confirm the lifeless creature stuck on the tip of my spear and was still holding its shield and see that it’s about the size of a human.

I swing my spear and fling all three bodies off. In the end, they’re nothing but goblins.

We suffer little to no casualties, while the goblin corpses are piling up. Somehow sensing that we are different from the usual hunters and villagers they always attacked, the survivors start to run away.

“Alright, let’s chase after them, they’ll lead us to their nest.”

“Slow down so we don’t get too close to them. Let them run.”

It really is a lifesaver for this to happen. It saves us the trouble of having to search around the woods.



“I thought things would be a lot easier...”

What appears in front of us as I slump my shoulders is a deep-looking cave, which I saw the goblins run into.

“If they just made their nest in the woods, it would be too open, wouldn’t it...”



Naturally, horses would not be able to enter caves and it would be harder for us to wield spears. To top it off, considering many goblins have holed up in there, it would definitely smell and be quite dirty.

“Haah... everyone get off your horses. We’ll go on foot.”

It’s not like we could just leave the cave alone. If we had a ton of oil, we could pour it and set it aflame, but since we don’t, we have no choice but to walk in ourselves.

“Those in the vanguard will hold the torches and it will get harder to swing your spears. Make it so that it’s easier to unsheathe your swords when they jump at you!”

Following Celia’s instructions, the soldiers enter the cave.

“They were probably multiplying inside the cave, so that’s why they didn’t get noticed.”

“That’s probably the case. From what I can see, there has been no signs of digging, so it might just be a naturally large cave.”

They made their nest in such a troublesome place. Not to mention, as soon we got in, one of them jumps out at me from our flank, and when I smash it on reflex, some strange liquid comes out of it. The goblins are dirty and their bodily fluids smell. I should have left this to Leopolt.

The cave is large and deep, but its structure is simple and fairly straightforward to navigate. When we walk through the narrow corridor, tight enough that no person could pass by when they lined up beside each other, we reach a large circular cavity containing many more smaller openings leading to neighboring rooms. In that large space is the scene that we have long-awaited for.

“Roughly... 500, it’s better in a place without trees, isn’t it?”

Celia and the soldiers look somewhat overwhelmed by the numbers.

“Gigiii—!!”

“Gyiii!!”

Those disgusting shrieks echo in the cave and it's quite unpleasant.

"Chief... no matter how... this is too much..."

Pipi holds her bow at the ready and draws close to my side.

This much is nothing, in fact it's just right. Now, it's much less disappointing than having only 100 waiting for us, where the task will be completed after each of us crushes two creatures.

"Pipi, stand back and support me with your bow. Celia, protect Pipi."

"But, then-!"

I grip my spear with all my might. The ceiling is pretty high so it doesn't look like my spear will scrape against it when I swing it around.

"Stand back. I'm going to swing with all my strength."

When I smile and hold my spear with both hands, the nearby soldiers hurriedly puts some distance between us. I suppose they'll avoid me until I show my back to the enemy.

"Around 10 per person. Go! Wipe them out!!"

"Ooooooooooh-!!"

The soldiers shout and the goblins also give a louder shriek in response. Standing at the front, I charge in and let the enemy taste a large swing of my spear.

"Dorryaa!!"

It's a full swing of my spear with both hands. A group of five that clumps together to attack me scatter into messy parts all at once. The larger sized pieces fly back towards the other goblins and hit them, causing them to stumble. Stumbling amongst a large crowd of charging allies is fatal and they are crushed into formless paste beneath their feet. I may have achieved killing 10 of them in just a single swing.

I bring the spear close to me after swinging it out and once again prepare for another

full-power swing, this time spinning my entire body as well to blow away enemies in all directions. There are some that jump at my chest, but a single kick knocks them out, rendering them motionless. To the goblins that are only 1 m tall, a kick from my iron-studded boots is a fatal blow.

“As expected, there are a lot!”

There are 100 of them mobbing around me. They aren’t that powerful or quick, but they can be a handful for a single person to deal with.

“Maybe I’ll use this.”

I hold my spear with one hand and use the other hand to grab the leg of a struggling goblin. It’s a little short, but I can use it like a club. Even if it breaks, there are plenty of replacements.

I rampage while switching from club to club, beating down those small fries rather than slicing them up. After the leg of my third club tore off, the enemy stops coming at me head-on.

“Giiih!”

Reacting to the noise from behind me, I contort my body to avoid the spear being thrust at me. I grab and break the tip of the spear, which is just a primeval object made with a sharpened stone on a stick, causing the goblin to have a clear expression of terror on its face. While thinking that they might actually have high intelligence, I use the tip of the spear to pierce its head.

When I evade another goblin that charges at me, it trips and falls forward. I rest my foot on its head and look around me. It appears I charged too far forward and separated myself from the others, causing the soldiers to get surrounded. Celia is shouting worriedly but I’m having an unexpectedly enjoyable time fighting over here.

The overall state of battle isn’t bad. There are a few people who have gotten injured and have fallen back to the corridor leading to the entrance, but despite being surrounded by a large difference in numbers, it doesn’t appear their formation is cracking. They are aligning their 2 m long spears in a box formation and are getting tired in their attacks. A fair amount of corpses are piling at their feet and if they continue to persist, it should get easier soon.

“Gyiiihih—!! Gyiiihih—!!”

Oops, I forgot my foot was still on its head. I shift the rest of my weight on my foot to crush the goblin’s skull and survey my surroundings. The goblins are constantly trying to intimidate me with their loud shrieks, but are not trying to jump at me. As a test, I thrust my spear at them and kill two, but they just widen their circle. It’s a good time to return to Celia, I guess.

“Aegir-sama! Geez! Don’t just charge out there and overdo yourself to that extent!!”

“I’m alright. What’s the situation like?”

“8 injured, two of which are in critical condition.”

They’ve taken quite a beating, but the enemy’s numbers have clearly taken a hit. Just one more push.

“I’ll buy a prostitute for those that stay alive. The one who kills the most will get many high-class prostitutes to entertain them!”

The soldiers cheer and the line of spears, once listless and unmotivated like drooping dicks, regain their vigor and point up at attention.

“Advance forward! Push them back!”

The soldiers thrust forward and pull back according to orders and the enemy collapses in front of them one after the other. They instantly recover the distance lost in the beginning and are continuing to move even further forward. The goblins’ numbers continue to decrease and they are starting to get indecisive. When they try to run but couldn’t get away, they realize that the only exit they could escape from is behind us.

“Fuh-!”

“Yah!”

The enemy is being pushed back, but some of them occasionally use their own allies as a platform to try and jump over our wall of spears. However, they get shot down in midair by either Celia’s knives or Pipi’s arrows and get reduced to pathetic falling

objects.

The outcome of the battle has been decided, and just when I thought the only thing left to do was to kill every single one of them, a large axe struck the wall of spears and knocked the soldiers on their butts.

“It’s huge...”

“This one’s the boss?!”

“In any case, he’s hugee!”

“It looks like the boss finally makes his appearance.”

I smile at Celia, but she’s glaring at the boss with eyes of scorn.

“This filthy... piece of crap!!”

The boss is around the same size as I am. It is similar to a hobgoblin except slightly larger, however it isn’t large enough to be anything special. The problem with the enemy, who is equipped with iron armor, is the thing between his legs. His large dick is swinging around.

The ordinary goblins aren’t particularly trying to hide their crotch area so you could say they are exposing themselves too, but this one is obviously larger.

Celia couldn’t stand the offensive sight and threw her knives – one bounces off his armor and the other one gets deflected with his axe. It appears that this goblin is the boss based on his skill and not just because he has a big dick. If he bulldozes his way forward, he may kill some soldiers.

“Guoooh”

The boss looks at Celia, the one who threw the knives, as his cock swells up. It’s true Celia is a nice woman, who you’d love to fuck, but that act deserves a thousand deaths.

“I’ll do it. Stand back.”

“Ultimately, it’s only the size of a child’s arm! Please show him that Aegir-sama’s is that

of an adult's arm!"

Are you telling me to show off here? After Celia shouts, she realizes that she basically professed familiarity with my superior member and she turns deep red.

The other small fry goblins don't appear to have the courage to attack me anymore and are hiding behind the boss while shouting. Once I beat this thing, the rest will easily be annihilated.

"Fuh-!"

"Guoggh"

There's no need to state my name when facing off against a monster. In one breath, I charge forward with a thrust and aim for his throat, but it blocks the attack by turning his axe sideways. Following that, I also aim for his chest and stomach, but both attacks were met with his axe. Since he didn't hold a shield, he was able to move quite deftly.

As I'm in admiration as to how this thing can be so ugly yet so skilled, the goblin swings his axe at me thinking I've faltered. I swing my spear and meet his weapon with the blade of the spear. As soon as I did so, he slips backwards and loses balance.

The power behind the swing of my spear is incomparable with a thrust. Not to mention, my spear is probably heavier than his large axe. The fact that he's trying to compete with me in strength already means the end of the line for him.

In no time, I repeat my strikes a second and third time, and although he somehow blocks them, a step is taken backwards every time. The full-powered fourth attack shatters his axe and drops the goblin to its knees at the same time.

"Guoooh!!"

He reaches for a replacement club at his waist in a panic, but that wooden object shouldn't be able to block my attack. The club splits in two and his right hand was also sliced off.

"Gaaaaaaah!!!"

It's settled. I don't know whether I should kill him, but there are still many goblins. I

need to show them that their boss is dead and turn them into a group of trapped rats.

I swing my spear down on the boss's head as he's holding his severed hand. The spear slams against the ground and after a brief silence, the boss splits in half vertically. The body fluids and entrails of the monster flow out and a tremendously horrid stench wafts in the air. The goblins standing behind the boss didn't make a sound and look on in shock. They no longer have any intention to fight.

"Crush the rest."

"Everyone charge! Kill them all!!"

Following Celia's shout, the soldiers rush forward towards the goblins who are attempting to escape, settling an obviously won battle. In an underground area with nowhere to run, the soldiers are chasing after the goblins like they were playing a game of tag, and then turning them into corpses. The area was soon cleared of any living monsters.



"I'm sure all of them have been crushed, but check the side caves just in case. We made such a smelly memory together, it would be depressing if this cave returned to its original state half a year later."

"Yes, we'll split up and search! If there is anything, we'll let you know!"

The soldiers divide themselves into groups to confirm the area. The majority of the caves are used as storehouses for decaying flesh or as toilets, but more problems arise.

"Uwaaaaah!!"

"Fireeee-"

Two soldiers catch on fire and roll back into the large cavity.

"What happened, did you turn over a pot of oil?"

The other soldiers flock around to pat the fire out, but the two of them suffered considerable burns.

“The goblin inside-! It can use magic!”

A goblin that uses magic? Does such a mysterious creature exist? I look at Celia and Pipi but they both shake their heads.

The soldiers look towards me in terror. I’m the person with the highest authority after all, and it won’t be a good memory for the magician, but it can’t be helped.

“Pardon my intrusion!”

I greet even though it’s sort of ridiculous, but when I enter the small room through the hole in the side, a fireball is hurled to greet me back. The magical flame... hit the goblin stabbed on my spear and starts burning it. It didn’t feel like anything tangible, but simply fire being thrown at me. Everything is still within expectations then.

There is still some distance between me and the goblin who fired its magic from the entrance, so even if I run towards the creature, I’ll become a ball of flames before I get a chance to attack. I could always throw my spear at it, but I’ll have the trouble of pulling my spear out of the goblin.

Thus, I use my opposite hand to pick up a rock and throw it. It weighs around the same as my spear and is an unshapely rock, but it’ll have quite an impact if it hits. The rock flies horizontally through the air at the target.

When I hurl the rock at the goblin, it sticks out its hands to try and block it but after fracturing both its hands, the rock’s momentum carries itself into the goblin’s head, and cracks its skull with a dull sound. It’s a joke that I was able to defeat a magic-user by chucking a rock. I went to check just in case, but with both arms and legs twitching, its death is pretty much confirmed.

“...Even if you didn’t do something so outrageous, Pipi or I would have finished it off.”

Don’t say something so ridiculous. I’d be in trouble if your pretty skin got burned.

“But this is... a book? A goblin with a book?”

“Something like magic, seems like it requires a considerable amount of knowledge. I’ve never heard of this.”



We can't do anything just by thinking about it. We should quickly search this cave and leave this smelly place. But that wasn't the only strange thing.

"Lo-! Look at this!!"

"Hey! Are you alright!?"

An unbelievable sight unfolds before our eyes in the relatively large space.

"How horrible..."

"....."

Even in the smelly cave, there is a conspicuous odor... an intense stench was drifting around the cave, horrid enough to turn your nose, and there are over 100 women laying sideways that could not fit into the cave. All of them are stark naked and looking at us with dead eyes. The fluid accumulating on the floor is probably the goblins' semen. They must have been fucked just recently, as there are many women who have fresh semen dripping from their crotches.

"...Call everyone over. We'll help them out."

The soldiers pick up the women, who are covered in dirty liquids, but the females stare with hollow eyes and reflexively spread their legs apart.

"Ghk, it smells..."

"What a stench."

On top of their excreting fluids and other dirty products smeared on them, the women, who continued to get raped by the goblins, are in such horrible conditions the soldiers don't even have the luxury to lust for them.

"Take them outside first. Also form an advance party with about ten people to check the surroundings... and report if there is a small stream or pond."

At that time, one of the woman holds her stomach in pain.

“It hurts! It hurts, it hurts!! I don’t want this... I don’t want to give birth! I don’t want itttttt!!”

After some unbearable screaming and grating shrieks, I could hear the familiar cry of a baby.

The woman gave birth to a goblin’s child. Furthermore, similar cries in the back room started to work in harmony with the first baby’s cry. When I part the worn-out cloth and peek in the room, close to a hundred goblin children and small child-sized goblins are crawling around.

“Urghghhh!!”

One of the soldiers couldn’t handle the scene and pukes. So this is the answer to the question of how the goblins were able to reproduce so quickly.

“Hurry and carry the women outside... and then use something to seal off the front of the room. Once the women are all outside, set it on fire.”

It’s been a long time since I’ve seen such a disgusting scene. I kick the small goblin at my feet all the way to the back of the room, carry women on both my shoulders and head outside. The expressions of the soldiers, who were rejoicing in their victory a little earlier, disappeared and are simply moving in silence.



I sit on the stump of a tree as I gaze at the billowing smoke coming out from the abominable cave like a chimney. The fire spreads throughout the interior of the cave, scorching anything and everything that could be set aflame, turning the inside of the cave into a blazing inferno hell. Oil was splashed everywhere, especially in the room used for breeding, before the fire was lit.

“Keep watch and ensure nothing comes out.”

Once I commanded the soldiers, I head to the area where the saved women have been brought. The women are gradually regaining their senses as they inhale the scent of the forest and bathe in the sun’s rays.

“How are they, are they ready to talk?”

“It’s impossible for most of them. But several of them...”

I speak to a woman who looks like she’ll be alright.

“The goblins have all been killed. Are you ready to talk?”

“...yeah, yeah, I-, I-, I’m alright. S-s-somehow.”

I use a wet towel to wipe her face and drip water to let her drink. The woman is able to calm down and collect herself.

“Thank you... I’m okay now...”

“Alright, so why have you been captured there?”

“I was... in the middle of running away from the famine when I got attacked... and the men got killed...”

“How about the other women?”

“I don’t know! Once you get brought there, you get raped and there is not even any time to rest! ! got... by five of them! And five of them were born!!”

It would be better if I stop listening now. I should be getting them back to the village first to let them rest their bodies.



It isn’t that far from the village, but there aren’t many women who could walk on their own. They aren’t only riding on the horses, but also being carried on the backs of the soldiers. By the time we reached the village, it is already nighttime.

“How are the women doing?”

“They’re sleeping like logs. They’re physically and mentally worn out.”

The villagers were reluctant to accept the women at first because of the foul stench, but I shut them up with a single stare. Fortunately, it is summer time and they could

dunk themselves in the well's water to wash themselves, but unless they thoroughly did so, they won't be able to remove the smell. In addition, the women would rather sleep than wash themselves, so they slept as though they were unconscious.

"There was a small river on our way back. Have everyone wash themselves there. It isn't just because it's unclean, they'll get sick."

"Yeah... When I counted, there are about 150 people. It's amazing how many were gathered."

According to the scattered reports from the women, they weren't gathered all at once. Many of them were in the middle of moving from Treia to my territory in small groups before getting attacked by the goblins.

"It's true that the goblins used the women for breeding purposes but... Normally, they shouldn't be able to gather several hundreds of them. Since it's impossible that many women travel alone without any sort of escort."

The large number of gathered women will then get pregnant one after the other, and the goblins will instantly increase their numbers. It takes a goblin baby about a month to be born after the female is pregnant and the baby will become an adult in about two weeks. If a hundred women got pregnant, their numbers will reach the thousands in no time. The reason that it stopped only at a hundred women is because of cannibalism due to lack of food and in-fighting due to power struggles between comrades.

"Even at this moment, there are pregnant women. Before we take them to the village, we have to do something about that."

"Send a forewarning and have a well-acquainted guy come. If the goblin gets born, they'll lose their place to stay."

"Aegir-sama, you intend to bring the women back with you?"

There's no other choice. The men, who accompanied and brought them here, have all been killed. Most of them don't even have relatives.

"I guess so... it can't be helped."

“It’s nothing, don’t worry about it. As long as their physical body returns, I’ll comfort their hearts later.”

“That’s what I’m worried about!!”

“Chief, you’re finally going to have your orgy with 100 women?! Pipi wants in too!”

I embrace the two of them when they suddenly start making a fuss.

As long as I’m able to, I’ll protect them all.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Summer.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 500 At most 6000

Assets: 6900 gold (5800) (Internal Affairs Materials -100) (Labor Cost -200)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Yoguri (just eating meals), Casie (ghost)

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 53, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 93

## HEALING OF THE HEART

---

**-Aegir POV-**

Rattling sounds can be heard as the line of wagons progress along the road. In order to treat the women, who have been saved from the nest of goblins, they need to be brought to Rafen briefly, but since we couldn't tell them to walk, we had wagons come pick them up.

"Everyone seems to have calmed down quite a bit. At one point, I didn't know what was going to happen."

It's exactly as Celia says – because of the tragic circumstances the women suffered, they were frightened, crying and some even wanted to die. That's why I want to eat and drink until I'm full to get some relief.

"I believe that night attack was crucial."

The night after we saved the women, the few surviving goblins came to attack the village in an attempt to take back their reproduction tools. The women went into a state of panic, but the soldiers and I beat down the goblins in front of their eyes.

The women saw me as their savior after I took down the hobgoblin leading the mob of goblins. Several of the women automatically reach for my crotch.

"We were captured for so long that we didn't even know how much time passed... our bodies have also become so lewd."

"Mr. Feudal lord, you were so cool. And you have gathered such unbelievably handsome soldiers too..."

Even amongst the women who were saved, the ones who regained their mental and physical strength are talking to us quite assertively.

"Handsome?"

Celia turns her head. I don't have a particularly handsome group of guys. And although there are attractive guys, there are also guys that are as ugly as pigs. However, goblins are the ugliest and dirtiest of all monsters. After those girls have been with goblins for such a long time, most men they see henceforth will appear beautiful to them.

By the way, I prohibited the soldiers from laying their hands on the women. I thought that after they were fucked repeatedly by goblins, their hearts would be broken, but from the look of things, it may have been unnecessary caution on my part.

"All of you should go to the city and get treated first. If you aren't feeling well, don't be shy to admit it."

""Okaayy~""

Some girls reply cheerfully, but there are some who still haven't regained their energy and are just nodding silently. On the surface, the order is in consideration for how hard it would be for those girls to live with the residents of Rafen from now on if they show such an unsightly appearance. But in actuality, it's because things would be problematic if they gave birth to a goblin's child in the city, so that's why they should get treated first.

Seeing 150 women gathered together like this is quite the spectacle. Not to mention, these women are all of childbearing age, so there's an air of eroticness about them. Just when I was thinking of attacking them, the group of tents pitched on the plains close to Rafen came into our field of view. It's the area where the women will be treated we prepared ahead of time.

"Carry the women into the tents! It's fine if you grope their ass, but treat them with care."

The soldiers help the women and carry them off the wagons one by one. Normally, the soldiers would grumble when they're asked to carry water barrels and military supplies, but absolutely no complains came out of their mouths this time. The women should all be able to walk, but they're all blushing as they entrust their bodies to the soldiers. Some of the men and women lock lips with each other, but I'll pretend I didn't see anything.





A few days later

“My lord, the treatment of those women is complete.”

When I returned to my house, an elderly man working as the head doctor in Rafen comes and reports to me... it's the doctor I first brought to this city. The population has increased exponentially so there are more doctors as well. His job is to gather all of them and to report to me directly. Many women needed treatment this time so many more doctors are needed to constantly supervise them.

“The treatment consists of medicine and...”

I hold out my hand to signal that he doesn't have to go on.

“The women deserve their privacy. I don't need to hear the details. I just want to know whether any traces of goblin remain in them.”

“I see... Well, they can continue to live as ordinary girls. But a few of them are emotionally troubled. It's not something I can fix as a doctor.”

“Umu, I'll think of something for that. Good work.”

The head doctor bows once and leaves. Let's go meet the girls now.

Celia is waiting for me outside the room.

“Aegir-sama, the soldiers that participated in the goblin suppression are gathering outside the gate... do you still have something you need them for at this point in time?”

“For something necessary.”

“Then I will come with you as well.”

“You can't. You'll stay in the mansion to keep watch and make sure Pipi doesn't come either.”

Celia makes a dejected face. But she can't come today. It won't be good for her

upbringing.



“So that’s how it is. Tomorrow, I’ll take everyone to Rafen. I’ll look after your lifestyles for the moment so you can do whatever you want, like make a family or find a new way of living.”

And then... I add on further. What I’m about to say is the real issue at hand.

“To forget the hardships of the past and to heal the wounds in your heart, I believe that being embraced by a man is the best medicine. If you so desire... the soldiers that saved you are here. Would you like to try and be with them?”

Everyone was surprised, as neither the women nor the soldiers convened in this place were informed of anything. Moreover, besides the change in their expressions and gazes, not a single one of them moved. Will this end poorly after all?

“Uhm... I would like to be embraced by everybody...”

A docile-looking woman timidly raises her hand.

“I would also like to remember the feeling of a human man.”

A woman around 30 years old, who is at prime marrying age, raises her hand.

“Everyone’s handsome too... to be honest, I might be really happy right now.”

A girl around the same age as Celia raises her hand. Seeing little opposition to the idea, everyone starts raising their hands all at once after they saw several others do it. The plan is going smoothly; I can simultaneously heal the bodies and souls of the women, as well as provide a reward to the soldiers for winning the battle.



Although the sun has still not set, men and women are entangling with each other left and right. The number of women participating in these festivities are a little over 100; food and alcohol are given instead to the girls who lost the men they saved their virginities for and to those who developed romantic relationships with other girls

during the harsh tribulations, and they head to Rafen ahead of time. The only females remaining are the ones who jumped into the men's arms and those who want the men in their pants.

"It's not something like a goblin, but a human male, aah, it's the best..."

A middle-aged woman, who looks a little past 30, is straddling a muscular man and shaking her hips happily. The man underneath gets aroused by her large breasts and thrusts his hips in a trance, as the two of them hug each other and moan.

To the side, there is a young woman... in addition she has a promiscuous and sexy body. Men naturally flock around her and three dicks rock back and forth as they thrust in her vagina, ass and mouth. I was about to stop them as I thought they were pushing her too hard, but as soon as the dick came out of her mouth, she let out an erotic moan.

"Amazinng, to have three wonderful men fucking me like this. Don't be afraid to move your hips more, fuck me as much as you want. Pour all your human seed in meee!"

The girl puts the dick in her mouth again as she closes her eyes and sucks on the meat rod, urging it to ejaculate. She is enjoying the orgy with tears of joy running down her face.

"You're really okay... with a guy like me?"

"What about you, you're fine with a girl like me?"

"Regardless of what I think... is such a beauty like you satisfied with me?"

The couple faces each other and sits down together. The man... is one of my soldiers and his face is familiar. He is considerably brave and talented at fighting, but he's ugly, like a fusion between a human and a pig. It doesn't matter much with men, but no matter what you think, it's a face women will find hard to love.

On the other hand, the girl is still at an age where she hasn't been with many men, and her ass and breasts are on the small size, but her face is really pretty. Unfortunate to say, but in normal circumstances, men would not usually lust after her.

"I don't have such a large chest, but if you're alright with that, please embrace me."

“Uu... UUuoooh!!”

The man gets fired up and jumps at the girl. If you do that, she'll get scared though.

“Kyaa! Geez, you're like a baby.”

But the young woman isn't frightened, and accepts the man, stroking the man's face with her hand.

“You're so cool.”

The man completely loses his composure and shakes his hips in a daze.

“You're fine with me!? Then-! Will you become my wife!?”

“Aauh! Yeah, sure! If you'll have me, then I'll be your wife!! Aaah, I'm cumming!”

“Uoooooh!!”

The man uses the strength he trained in the army to lift the woman and thrusts deep inside her. It completely looks like rape from an outsider's perspective but the girl is caressing the man's head and kissing him repeatedly. It truly is 'the beauty and the beast' and they're enjoying themselves to the fullest.... Maybe she's fine because she didn't see any of the other guys who went into the city, but as expected, it would have been a blow that the soldier won't be able to recover from if she were to refuse him here.

It can't be helped that I see so much sex around here. I went outside to see if I can find someone to partner with me, and two girls, who are still clothed, grab my hands.

“There's the feudal lord~”

“Over here, over here.”

The girls pull my hand and lead me into the large tent used for treatment. As soon as I enter the tent, I feel a wave of heat. Even though it's summer, this heat is typically unthinkable for the gradually darkening evening time.

“““Welcome”““

““It’s the feudal lord.”“

““Nice to meet you~”“

That should have been the case, but while the tent is big, 30 girls have squeezed into the space where there is only room for treating about 10 people. Besides the ones who came to get me, all the other girls are fully naked and beads of sweat are glistening on their bodies.

“Well this is quite a lot of you...”

“The other soldiers are fine too, but we only want the feudal lord to sleep with us. So we waited here.”

“Mr. Feudal lord... you were so cool.”

“You’re handsome and strong, and on top of that, you’re kind to us. There aren’t any women who wouldn’t fall in love.”

There’s a question mark attached to the part about me being handsome. I don’t think I’m particularly ugly, but I don’t think I have an especially beautiful face either. The only one who says I’m handsome is Celia and she’s biased, so I can’t take her word at face value.

Since they’ve been saved, they were receiving treatment here and not able to meet many people, so even now, it appears they don’t have a proper grasp of the standard of a man’s face. But if they’re going to be fucked either way, maybe it would produce more healing if they believe the person is handsome.

“We gathered the ones who only want to be embraced by the feudal lord, but it turns out there are a lot of us... is it alright with you?”

“Of course. A person who dislikes being around a bunch of women isn’t a man. Come.”

The women are squealing and kyaaing as they gather around me. In the blink of an eye, they strip my clothes and several women push me on my back. It’s like an avalanche of women. They kiss me as if competing with each other to take possession

of my lips and the ones left out rain kisses on my nape and face. The ones around my lower body finally take the last piece of clothing off.

“Uwah! It’s big.”

“Amazing! It’s still soft, yet it’s this thick. What’ll happen when it gets erect?”

“It’s the smell of a man... but it doesn’t stink. It smells nice.”

Considering their previous gloomy and depressed state from the period with the goblins, it’s almost like they are different people now and are more cheerful. It appears the main factor is the shadow of the goblins haunting the women has disappeared and knowing their lifestyles will be covered for the most part for the next little while. As expected, it’s better for women to be cheerful and lewd.

“Let’s hurry and lick it so it gets bigger.”

“There are many of us here, so there isn’t much space.”

“...I want to lick his asshole.”

As expected, when they all try to crowd around my crotch, there’s not enough space.

“You can get on top of me. You won’t be heavy for me.”

“Well, you’re this muscular after all... then pardon me.”

Two women got on top of me with their butts towards my face. Their slightly opened slits dripped some of their juices onto my stomach.

“Nnh... ggh... oooh! This is amazing.”

At the same time, I am kissing two girls together, entangling my tongue with theirs, but am taken aback by the sudden rush of pleasure on my lower half. When I take a look, the women are crowding around my meat rod, almost overlapping each other, and 10 of them are using their tongues. Of course they’re licking the tip and my rod, but also putting their mouths on my balls and sucking the area near my asshole.

“Aahn, the tip, I’m next...”

“It’s getting bigger and bigger. Looks like one more person can lick his rod here.”

“This might be rude but... can I lick your asshole?”

It’s meaningless to be ashamed at this point in time. The ten mouths work hard to slurp my crotch area and it was quite absurd, but there are still more than half of the girls left idle.

“We want to do it too~”

“Just gonna get on top.”

“Kyah! You’re heavy.”

The group that was on standby lose their patience and climb over the girls servicing me so they can crawl their tongues over me. As the girls lick my body, they start gasping and the increasingly choking smell of sex gradually get my meat rod hard.

“Uhyaa... this is amazing.”

“Even more than that thing...”

“Yeah, it’s much bigger than that dirty boss’s.”

“It’s no good!! I can’t wait anymore.”

Just when I was thinking it would be fine to cum like this, one of them couldn’t hold back and climbs on top of me, grabbing my meat rod with both hands and guides it to her entrance. The girls around her voice their complaints but that girl doesn’t move from her position on top of me.

“Hey! If you’re going to do it, hurry up! We want to do it too.”

“S-sorry... it’s too big and won’t-...”

“Enough of that! Here, quickly!”

The girl’s words are cut short and the surrounding women grab her thighs, forcefully

dropping her hips onto my rod. Although the women aren't all that strong, with four of them, they are able to instantly bury almost my entire dick into the girl's hole.

"gh-!!! Nnnhhaaah-!!"

Through the tip of my penis, I could feel the sensation of many things being pushed apart inside the woman. Undoubtedly, my cock has buried itself all the way into the woman's womb and the tip has penetrated the entrance.

"Oooh... ooooooh... it's so... deep."

The girl felt such intense stimulation that she trembles uncontrollably, yet the other girls continue to push her back and grab her thighs to rock her hips.

"Hey, hey, she finally got her chance to enjoy herself, so don't do things so forcefully."

I get up from the position on my back and get into the missionary position, covering the girl with my body almost as if I was protecting her from the others.

"There, let's do it slowly. Can you tell that it's inside you?"

"Yes... Yes... It's so big that it feels like it's tearing me apart."

"Does it hurt? Do you want to pull it out?"

The woman shakes her head in such a way that it seems her neck would snap.

"Please continue to move like this. It's fine if it tears me, just kiss me aft-... nnmh!"

I kiss her and continue moving slowly. Unlike the earlier crazy slushing sounds, a steady rhythmical sticky sound is made with each thrust of my hips.

"Uuu... she's hogging him all to herself. How nicee..."

"Nothing will change even if we complain. Let's wait our turn. If it's the feudal lord, he'll surely give his dick to all of us."

"Uhm... can I lick your asshole?"



We are just moving slowly, but it didn't take long before the girl under me starts convulsing.

"I'm cumming, sorry! It's only me-!!"

"It's fine. Cum in my arms."

I hug her with my entire body, as if swallowing her whole, and give a final strong thrust. Without even moaning, the surprised girl trembles intensely and lies languidly.

"Good work, let her sleep somewhere."

The woman remains passed out with a happy look on her face as I pull my rod out of her and sit cross-legged. I haven't ejaculated yet, so my dick is getting harder and bigger.

"Who's next?"

As if trying to sit on me, several women came to me with their asses towards me.



6 hours later

"Aaaaahhaaa—!!"

"Ooh!!"

In the missionary position, I slam my hips against her with all my might and then ejaculate. I kiss the girls, who are losing their consciousness one after the other, and watch over them until they fully close their eyes. That makes 10... or is it 11?

When I pull out, three women flock around me and use their tongues to clean my rod. There's another girl licking my asshole, although it feels like she's been doing this from the very beginning. Being licked endlessly like this makes me feel strange.

"You're next, so what position would you like?"

"Ah, from the back please... roughly, as if you're raping me."

Leave it to me and relax your hips.

“Mr. Feudal lord? Are you alright? You’ve been swinging your hips constantly for several hours.”

This is nothing, since I normally do it with the women in my house after all. Doing it three times each for eight people is no problem for me.

“...perhaps we offered our bodies to someone exceedingly wonderful?”

“Maybe we’ll all be pierced to death before tomorrow.”

While listening to the women speak, I hold the hips of the girl I’m fucking and increase the speed of my own hips. There is an unbelievably intense smell and heat inside this tent, but unlike the goblin’s nest, I welcome this.



6 more hours later

“There! Cum!”

“Aaaaaaah~~~!!”

The girl I lifted up by the thighs leaks love juice and urine from her crotch, my semen sprays all over the place and she leans against my neck. She’s still moaning a little, but her consciousness has flown far away.

“That’s 25 people, looks like I can do everyone.”

As expected, my dick is losing some of its rigidity, but many of the remaining girls are big-breasted. If I bury my face in them, my dick will revive in no time.

“Mo-... a monster...”

“Does he have semen stored in his entire body...?”

That’s rude. I drink a large gulp of water and press against the remaining girls. Because

of the heat, my entire body is covered in sweat, but at this point it only acts as a spice to further stimulate my lust.

“Get on top of each other and entwine your tongues. I’ll do you together!”

Even now, there’s still one girl licking my asshole. How obsessed with my asshole is she if she’s going to keep licking for half a day?

Having gotten aroused from the foreplay and servicing earlier, the four girls promptly reach their climax and join the pile of sleeping girls. There is only one more remaining.

Her hair is red like a flame and she is rather short, but not short enough to look like a child. She’s lacking in the breasts department and her butt is small, and when the girl speaks, her voice is quiet like a whisper.

“Uhm... I have a request...”

“You want me to put it in your ass right?”

“Eh!? How did you-?”

Well, that’s because you’ve been licking my asshole this whole time. Plus, you have a finger in your own asshole. You really like the ass, don’t you.

“Then... please do so...”

Her quiet mumbling is hard for me to interpret. It’s like Alma from the capital, but all grown up.

“Then, I’m going to kiss you.”

“No, it’s fine... it’s dirty, plus my mouth is exclusively for the asshole.”

“Then I’ll put it in. Your body is small after all, so I’ll get it wet enough that your ass doesn’t tear...”

“Eei.”

The girl sticks her finger in her own ass and spreads it wide. In this way, it’s bigger

than the hole in front, and I can basically see her insides.

“...Was it used by the goblins?”

“...I did it myself.”

I'm speechless. I place my dick at the entrance and infiltrate her ass in one quick motion.

“How deep... it's easily going all the way to the back.”

“...ah, aaaaaaaaah.”

The girl's asshole feels soft, and is swallowing my entire length as if there is no dead end. Once I insert my rod up to the root, the girl trembles silently. Oh crap, I went too far.

“Hey, you alright?”

“aaaaaaaah.....!! It's soo biiiiiig!! My ass feels great, my assssss!! I was waiting for this! I was waiting for such a large penis to fuck my ass!! Aaaaah, it's reaching my insidessss! Ooohhohhhhhh!!”

“.....”

Where is the docile voice from before? She's now screaming repeatedly like how soldiers shout their war cries on the battlefield. Before I knew it, the girl was bouncing on top of me and grinding her ass against me. Her terrifying hip movements feel like it's scraping off my meat rod.

“uuun... what is...”

Hearing the unexpectedly loud moans from our sex, the girls who previously lost consciousness are waking up.

“Oooggaaaaaah!! This thick penis is stretching out my asshole! It's so long it feels like it'll come out my mouth!! It's the bessssst!! I can't get enough of such a big cock digging out my assholeeeeeee!!”

“What is this?”

“I also want to know.”

The girls are waking up one by one and sigh after looking at each other. In the end, the girl continued to shake her hips and after squeezing two shots from me, she fainted with my cock inside her. Her face is dripping with tears, snot and saliva, but looks full of delight.



Dawn

“Fuuh, it’s so hot.”

When I open up the tent, the air rushes in, almost making a whooshing sound as the cool air replaces the warmer air. The cold temperature during dawn feels a little bit like winter.

“Today was fun. If I wanted to be extra luxurious, I’d go for a second round...”

“Your stamina will last, but there’s not enough time...”

Celia said she would return in the morning. She doesn’t really sleep in and at this time, she’s usually already up waiting for me. Moreover, if the sun has completely risen and I don’t go back, she’ll definitely come looking for me. If she sees a scene like this, she might faint.

“Then what do you think about this?”

30 women – 29 women, excluding the one who’s addicted to my asshole to be precise – are kneeling outside with their asses towards me.

“Please taste whichever ass you like.”

“You can be rough.”

“Thrust into us with reckless abandon and make us faint before the sun comes up, ‘kay?”

I can't just reject them when they said this much, even if it makes Celia faint.

I lower my pants after just putting it on and expose my meat rod, grabbing my favorite ass with both hands. Around me, the soldiers and women, who were going at it since last evening, are starting to wake up.

"The feudal lord, he's doing it outside."

"Wait, how many people are there!? Did you have sex with all of them?"

"Woah! It's huge! What the heck is that?"

I don't have a preference of being watched while having sex, but I can't just back down now, and it's rather nice and cool out here. I slam my meat rod without hesitation into the ass I grabbed and she moans with a pleasure-filled voice in no time.

"The women can't get enough when they get pierced with something as thick and burly as that, can they?"

"My wife might also cheat with just one thrust from that."

"...Hey wait, what's that about the wife!? I thought you said earlier that you would give your wife to me!"

People are making a fuss around me, but I shake my hips regardless. Each person becomes exhausted after they cum, so after I let them do so, I move on to the next person. This time, the women are seeking pleasure more than they are seeking love, so they match their hip movements with me and finish off quickly. Looks like I'll be able to get everyone to climax before Celia comes.



"....."

"You came to get me, huh? Then, shall we head back to the house?"

"....."

“If we ride our horses, we’ll make it just in time for breakfast. I want to eat a mountain-load of bread with plenty of butter spread on top.”

“.....”

“Was Pipi being a good girl? She loves jam, so when you feed her some, she becomes obedient.”

“Uhm.”

“What?”

“The ground is covered in juices.”

“Is that so?”

“After this, I’ll be the one who cleans up the mess in the tent though, and I’m sure the place is covered with juices anyways, so it’s pointless to try and hide it.”

“Let’s eat.”

“My assss... Mr. Feudal lord... please give me more in the ass...”

“Hey Alice! Be quiet, will you?! You can’t right now!”

I hear a voice from inside the tent.

“I had Claire bring me some rare treats after all.”

“...It’s extremely sweet, so please have some.”

The bribery scheme was in vain, so after breakfast, Nonna ran up to me and rammed me with a flying headbutt.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Summer.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 500 At most 6000

Assets: 6450 gold (5700) (Internal Affairs Materials -100) (Labor Cost -200) (Medical Supplies, Doctors -150)

✂ All Assets: 6450, Remaining Loan: 5700, On hand: 750

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (enraged), Carla (concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Yoguri (just eating meals), Casie (ghost)

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 83, children who have been born: 9



# CHAPTER 94

## EXPECTED OUTBREAK OF WAR

---

–Aegir POV–

“It’s the autumn of this year.”

“Is that so?”

Then that makes sense.

The one talking to me right now is the supreme commander of the central army, as well as a Count of the Goldonia kingdom... in other words, Erich. Even though he normally doesn’t get out of the capital much, he finally got curious enough to check on his own territory, stopping by mine while he was at it. What we were just talking about is confirmation for the start of the war in autumn.

“As I thought, are we aiming for the harvest period?”

When the central army was established, most of the Goldonian royal army became the reserve army. On the other hand, Treia has many conscripted farmers, and the fact that they’re fighting during harvest season, will be its own disadvantage.

“That is also a factor, but the main reason is the movement of the other nearby nations. If we clash with them during the harvest period, the other countries won’t rush to Treia’s aid. In the meantime, we will settle things quickly.”

Besides Goldonia and Treia, the region also has the Yurest Alliance, which is connected on the border, the Magrado Dukedom separated by the large river and the republic of Stura. Neither of them pose a threat to Goldonia on their own, but if they come behind us while we’re in the middle of fighting Treia, it would be harder on us. On the flip side, as long as we finish off Treia, even if the other three nations joined forces, Goldonia will still be a tough competitor.

“Take them down quickly... is it?”

Treia is largely inferior to Goldonia in both population and economy, but their land is still quite vast. If we add the condition of ending it quickly, they might prove to be a tough opponent.

“In order to oppose the fortress that they’ve built up around their nation, we will also need to ready a considerable amount of siege weapons. Even so, we want to breakthrough from the front and promptly conquer the capital. As planned for today, you’ll invade them from the east, lure out their forces, and take over the eastern region if possible.”

“Yes.”

“I’ve also heard that they have set up defensive camps on the east, although not as many as from the front. Bring siege weapons with you.”

“About that.”

We could also do it secretly, but if we’re going to do it, it might be better if we work together with the central army.

“After the war starts, quickly.....”

Erich remains quiet and listens to me for awhile, but he’s thinking with his chin resting on his hand.

“If your plan works, it will certainly change the entire state of battle. But there are too many uncertainties, and it isn’t guaranteed that passing through the mountain nation’s territory is safe. If we encounter a roadblock there and end up having to backtrack, it would worsen our situation.”

“Even if it results poorly, it won’t affect the capture of the fortress. It’s nice if it goes well, but if it doesn’t, nothing will change. It shouldn’t be a bad bet.”

“Well, that might be the case for me, but won’t it be a fatal blow to you?... No, you’re also going through hell. I said something unnecessary.”

Erich nods slightly and stands up.

“Alright, do as you wish. Trust in your own good fortune.”

And so, the small meeting I had with Erich is over.



“It will be the autumn season. I don’t know how they’re going to set things up though.”

After the conversation with Erich and seeing him off, I gather together with Leopolt, Adolph and Celia.

“If it’s autumn, we’ll barely be able to make it somehow.”

Adolph murmurs without much worry.

“Oh, so would it be bad if it drags on?”

“Of course it will. It’s fine for the bow cavalry since they’re normally living in the mountains, but the 3000 soldiers of the private army are directly supported by us. We have gathered the poor residents, who won’t complain about their pay so long as they are provided with the daily necessities of life, but if we continue to pay them all as usual, we’ll run ourselves dry faster than we realize.”

The only reason that the soldiers haven’t complained about a decent pay is because they don’t have to worry about starving or finding lodging as long as they stay in the army. For a remote region living in poverty, those two factors are the most important. However, my territory is gradually stabilizing with Rafen as the core. In that case, it should not have much effect on the low pay relative to the other occupations.

“Once we get on the battlefield, they’ll plunder... no, there are also chances for them to take the enemy’s goods for themselves. And if we win, their morale will also go up.”

Adolph and Leopolt nod. Celia rests her head on my hand and also nods.

“We’ll do it at the same time the war breaks out. It seems we can work together with Erich and the central army.”

“Yes, preparations are progressing.”

I’ll have to send a messenger to the mountain nation as well. I went at Luna too much

yesterday so she can't move, and Ruby is looking after her. So, I guess I'll send Pipi.

"Claire should be in the city, so go call her. Also, tell Irijina to cut back on the soldiers' training so they don't get too tired."

"Isn't the start of war in autumn? It's still the peak of summer. Is there a need to take action so soon?"

I hug Celia close, and stroke her head, messing up her hair.

"Wah! What are you doinggg?"

"The actual battlegrounds have been determined for the most part. I think it's better in most cases to act quickly."

"I see..."

Celia doesn't seem convinced at all. Her knowledge centers around the books she reads, so I can see she's stuck in the mold of those theories. It would be nice if she could learn from Leopolt regarding that, but she's quite the stubborn kid.

I give Celia's cheeks a final pull and rise up from my seat. Claire's a merchant, so she acts quickly after all.

"Adolph, in regards to the dispatch of troops, we don't have the luxury to give an honest wage. It's time for the harvest. Consider limiting our labor force and sending the laborers back to their villages."

"I understand."

I'll leave the details for him to deal with. I guess in the worst case scenario where we run out of money, I can just borrow from Claire. Being short on cash is a little scary.



"Thank you very much for inviting me today."

Claire really showed up quickly along with her follower, the young girl. As expected of a go-getter merchant, she acts fast. If I didn't look carefully, I wouldn't have noticed

that her breathing is rough.

“Sorry for calling you so suddenly. Well, why don’t you drink some tea and catch your breath.”

“Sorry for the trouble.”

Claire only takes a sip from her cup for formality’s sake, so I state my business.

“I want to resupply on food and copper-lined water jugs.”

“Food, is it? This month’s portion of grain should have been delivered though.”

“Not grain. Something like cured meat and hard-baked bread.”

After talking with Leopolt, I present a piece of paper with a rough idea that was put together with much consideration.

“This is... the movement of the army?... no, please disregard that.”

As soon as I send her a slightly harsh stare, Claire immediately apologizes. Though she is a good woman, I can’t have her blabbering.

“Arrows and spare wheels for the wagons, and much more are written there, so please have a look. This is written with the entire army in mind so I’ll leave it to you to supply us with what you can. And also distribute it to the city’s craftsmen...”

“You don’t have to worry. I have made a contract with this city’s merchants and craftsmen and if I tell them, they’ll arrange it for me.”

It’s become like that before I knew it.

“Then I’m counting on you. It’s not an emergency, but we don’t have much time to spare either.”

“I’ll arrange for it immediately.”

While Claire looks at my messy handwriting, she writes her own letter quite smoothly. She writes quickly, not to mention her characters are very neat and pretty.

“As soon as I’m aware of the time, I’ll let you know immediately.”

With that said, Claire gets up and stands in front of me. When our eyes meet, she leans over and gives me a kiss on the lips.

“When you have time again, please give me some love.”

“Are you leaving the city?”

“Yes, the peddlers in Treia are having a little dispute so I thought I’d go and settle it-”

“You can’t.”

“Eh?”

I grab Claire’s hand and pull her back into the room, even though she was just thinking of leaving.

“For the next while, don’t enter the Treia kingdom.”

“But I’m a merchant, so...”

“I’ll say it again. You must not go there... got it?”

If I say it like this, she’ll surely understand my intentions. It can’t be helped, but it’s better than having Claire get mixed up in the mess and getting herself injured.

“I understand... thank you for the valuable information.”

Celia stares at me and asks me why I told her, but I ignore her.

“Then I’ll stay in this city.”

Claire hands the letter to one of my subordinates and returns to her room, stroking my hand gently before leaving.

“So now we have time... how shall we spend it?”

Without delay, she clings to me and looks up at me. When I look down, I can see the valley of her breasts from the gap in her clothes. In addition, her stomach is pressing against my crotch and I can feel myself getting hard.

“Laurie’s here today too... we can enjoy ourselves more.”

The young girl called Laurie is just as she appears – a child with an innocent smile.

“I’m Laurie. I’ve heard from Claire-sama that you’re an incredible and kind person. I don’t... have much experience with this kind of thing, but Laurie wants Viscount-sama to play with her too!”

Her face isn’t dyed with any kind of coercion, and it looks like she genuinely wants me to embrace her. But her appearance and gestures are completely like those of a child, and seems only slightly older than Pipi.

“But surely it won’t fit...”

“It’ll be fine? Laurie’ll do her best! And if it’s Hardlett-sama, I’d be happy to be broken...”

The young girl lightly clasps her hands together in front of her mouth and looks at me with a somewhat feverish gaze. She’s charming enough to make me want to embrace her even though I’m not interested in tiny girls like her. If it was Andrei, he would throw off his clothes without hesitation.

I extend my hand and consider tasting her a little bit just to try, but Celia appears at the tip of my hand.

“Aegir-sama still has jobs he has to do. Claire-dono, please leave.”

“No, I don’t really...”

“You do!”

Celia is getting desperate, so it can’t be helped. I give up tasting her and let the girls leave. The young girl was just a sideshow, but it’s a real shame I missed my chance to sleep with Claire.

“I hate women who give such flattery to any and every guy they meet. Those kinds of women will always have another side to them!”

“You say woman, but she’s just a girl around 10 years old right?”

“...You were going to embrace that child, weren’t you?”

It’s not like I was seriously going to embrace her, I was just going to have a taste.

(That kid, she has guts, doesn’t she?)

All of a sudden, Casie appears from the ceiling. Come from the door, you scared me.

(That girl, she could see me. When I took a peek during that conversation you had earlier, our eyes met.)

Earlier? You weren’t here, were you?

(I stuck my face halfway out of the wall behind you.)

Don’t do that kind of thing. You’ll repel the guests who can see you.

(Our eyes met, but she was absolutely unfazed. It’s quite amazing, even though she’s so small. There are huge muscular guys who would wet themselves too.)

There’s a prevalence of deceitful appearances in this world after all. But it’s a little unbelievable, since if a small innocent child sees a ghost or something, they’d want to cry. Maybe she didn’t really see the ghost, but just coincidentally looked in that direction.

(I’m sure she saw me though...)

As Casie mumbles something, she grabs a fruit from the desk and takes a bite. Recently, this ghost has started eating things. And please stop mumbling in my head, it’s giving me a headache.

“That’s good and all, but you’ll have to take responsibility for making me miss my chance to taste those girls.”



“Th-that is... please wait, not here. Wait until we get back to the room... no, Casie-san is looking!”

(I’m watching~)

I hold Celia’s arms behind her and forcefully lower her shorts and underwear all at once, then place my meat rod against her. She’s grown in height so when she lowers her hips, we can somehow do it in this position too.

“No matter how many times I put it in... it’s tight.”

“Aaaaah... Aegir-sama’s thing is always so thick and hard... it’s spreading me apart... it’s going to tear meee...”

I fuck Celia roughly from behind and she climaxes while Casie watches.



### **-Third person POV-**

After a while, in the Treia Kingdom

“Ready?”

“No problems.”

“Going well.”

About ten men exchange short words with each other and check their weapons, spears and bowguns. The men are wearing the armor for the legitimate army of the Treian Kingdom. Because of the large conscription happening recently, it’s not rare to find soldiers in Treia.

“Alright, it’s here.”

At the end of the men’s line of sight, a considerably large caravan is moving forward slowly. There are escorts on horseback riding with the several wagons and they don’t appear tense at all. This isn’t the large highway where there’s high traffic or where bandits and monsters are either. There’s tension between the nations, but unless a

war is going on, there's no reason for the merchants to stop doing business. However, it results in something catastrophic.

“Go!!”

The men jump out and stand in front of the caravan to block their path. The escorts react to the people who jumped out so suddenly, but when they saw the armor of the Treian Kingdom, they froze. The middle-aged man in charge of the caravan steps forward and presents some documents with a servile smile.

“Thank you for your hard work. This here is the document from the Treian Kingdom that permits us to pass through here.”

The middle-aged man is on his best behavior in order to pass through and make this temporary inspection go as smoothly as possible. But then, his head drops to the ground with that flattering smile still plastered on it.

“Wh-what the?!!”

The subordinate of the supposed merchant and the escorts all turn their eyes to the scene.

“Do it! Kill them all!!”

Instantly, the escorts are shot down with bowguns and the merchants trying to escape are killed.

“Stop! Please stop! We are just simple merchants... this is-!”

“You are Goldonians, that's enough for us!”

A sword pierces through the front of his face and after a shrill scream, the pathetic merchant stops moving. The slaughter soon ends and there are no remaining persons alive around the wagons.

“Take everything of value and set fire to the wagons! Somebody will come soon. We'll run away before that.”

“It's become so familiar to us, with it being our third time.”

“It really feels like we’ve become bandits. But we’re finished with that now, we’ve done enough to fulfill our roles.”

The men dump the Treian army’s armor and equipment into a deep hole they dug in advance and pile dirt on top carefully. Their roles have finished with this and now they’ll return to Goldonia, where their families are waiting.

“There are already rumors that people from Treia attack and kill people from Goldonia in this area.”

“The others are doing well too.”

Even during this attack, they pretend not to notice the escorts escaping and purposely let them run away while plundering. The escorts are running for their lives back to Goldonia, and should tell the kingdom of the incident.

“If we run in a group, we’ll stand out, so we’ll part ways for now... meet up in the capital next. Don’t get caught.”

“““Yessir! Glory to Goldonia!”“““



Without much time passing, Goldonia declared war on the Treian Kingdom to prevent the barbaric acts and to retaliate against the murder of their own merchants and travelers by the Treian soldiers.

From the perspective of the surrounding nations, they thought that this is ultimately a result of Treia’s savage acts and something they caused themselves, and not the pointless argument Treia is claiming in which Goldonia is conspiring to invade and take away territory from them.

And thus, not even two years after the united front in the Arkland war, these two nations will clash with each other.

---

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. End of Summer.

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. King of the Mountains

Troops Commanded: Eastern Independent Army 2000, Private Army 3000, Bow Cavalry 6000

Assets: 1300 gold (700) (Labor Cost -150) (Army Provisions, Supplies -5000)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (pregnant concubine), Rita (maid), Catherine (lewd), Sebastian (butler), Ruby (Luna's follower), Yoguri (freeloader), Casie (ghost)

Children: Sue, Miu, Ekaterina (daughter), Antonio (son), Kuu, Ruu, Rose (foster)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (commander), Luna (commander), Pipi (follower), Leopolt (staff officer), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Claire (official merchant), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 83, children who have been born: 9

# CHAPTER 95

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ①

### OUTBREAK OF WAR

---

–Aegir POV–

“To Viscount Hardlett-sama, a messenger from His Majesty calling for an urgent meeting!!”

A loud sound echoes at dawn. The man dashed into the city of Rafen while still on his horse and rode directly to the entrance of my mansion. Normally, it wouldn't be strange for this sort of rude act to be met with a slap, but the man's job is the only one that is permitted to do so... the emergency express messenger sent directly from the king.



“So it's here.”

“Aau...”

I pull my slippery dick out from Irijina's crotch, leave the girl lying face down on the bed, sling on a robe and exit the room. After getting permission from the servants, without even going to the reception room, the messenger walks all the way up to me in the hallway.

“Sorry for intruding this morning!”

“Me too, looking like this.”

The strong smell of semen drifts through the air, and it's clear that I came just after having sex with a woman, but the messenger doesn't mind at all.

“The words from the King! ‘Our country has declared war on the kingdom of Treia, and Viscount Hardlett is to commence military action immediately. Show your loyalty

to the kingdom.' That's all."

"I understand. Please reply that I will definitely bring victory to Goldonia."

"Yessir!! Then I'll take my leave!"

The express messenger gets on his horse and leaves while standing on the stirrups, unlike how he came. I don't think he needs to hurry to deliver my reply, but I guess that's also a part of his job.

"So it's finally come."

"We'll make preparations immediately."

Leopolt, Celia and Luna are already awake and lining up. Irijina dons her armor, though my semen is dripping out from her crotch.

"The timing is slightly rushed, but everything is roughly going according to plans. Everyone ready?"

""""Yessir.""""

With a whoosh, everyone scatters off to take command of their respective units. Everyone is skilled, so they'll get things ready without me having to check on them.

"Here you go."

Mel, who once again has a slightly larger stomach<sup>1</sup>, Nonna and Carla brings me my armor.

"Thanks."

The three of them help me equip my armor.

In my full-armored state, I open the door and look out from the entrance of my house to see the gathering of the soldiers; I can see soldiers rushing out from the brothels and bars, and the soldiers who own homes are kissing their wives before heading out.

From the simple tenement house built beside my own mansion, where the 150 women

who I saved previously live for now... I can also see a few soldiers rushing out half-naked in a panic. For the sake of the women's lifestyle from now on, I told them I didn't mind if they brought men with them there. It seems the soldiers are quite popular with the women since their desire to be protected is strong. The 30 women that slept with me insist not to sleep with other men though.

When the women saw me, they all lowered their heads in a deep bow.

"This is for you."

Rita leads Schwartz by the reins. Normally, she wouldn't be handling horses, but Schwartz doesn't resist when he gets led by a woman.

I jump on this arrogant horse, who doesn't even bend over for my consideration, and head to the outside of the city. The women never stopped waving their hands to me.



"How are the preparations going?"

"Well, you're talking about 5000 soldiers here. It'll take a bit more time."

I watch the soldiers gradually gather together outside the city as I listen to Celia's report. I guess that's natural. I can't expect them to be ready immediately when I tell them to go. Then it might have been better to fuck either Nonna or Carla. Not being able to ejaculate in the morning makes my hips feel heavy.

"Uhm..."

I turn back at the sound of the soft voice to see Catherine watching in the tent's shade. She probably came to greet me face-to-face by herself. This is perfect timing.



"Eh? What!? I wasn't going to-... while your armor is still on!? No, it's not that I don't want to... in fact I'm happy- aagh!? I'll masturbate while thinking of you while you're not here too so... be rougher. It's fine even if my asshole tears so fuck me senseless..."

Although we are in the shade, having sex in the garrison allows the other soldiers to

peep as well. The scene in which a beauty faints in agony from having a dick penetrate her seems to have helped the unmarried soldiers and those who don't have the money to buy prostitutes empty their balls.



Right when Catherine's asshole started gaping, the soldiers finish their preparations.

"Aegir-sama, the entire unit's preparations are compl-... uwaah!!"

"Alright. Let's depart."

I entrust Catherine to one of the mansion's servants that came to get me and then stand in front of the army.

"I won't say much. Crush the enemy when you fight them. All troops, advance!!"

""""""Oooooooooh—!!""""""

We depart as the residents of the city see us off. It's been so long since I've battled with a human opponent, I'm looking forward to it.



After that, it takes us a whole day to march directly into Treia, heading south towards the border, and once we confirm that no one can see us and there is nothing around us in the wilderness, we divide the army.

"Then, we'll continue further south from here! I pray for your good fortune!"

"You too, even if you suffer defeat, absolutely don't die."

I hug Irijina close and when I give her a kiss, I can smell the scent of the large amount of semen I had her drink last night.

Irijina takes a portion of the army with her – the entirety of the eastern army and the infantry unit of the private army – to go west to collide with Treia's defensive camp. I entrust with her all the siege weapons I got from Erich as well, as she continues westward.



“The rest of the army will change course and head east.”

With only 1000 cavalry left in my squad, we cut off from the infantry and the sluggish siege weapons and head east.

“It wouldn’t have been such a hassle if we headed east right from the start.”

“It would seem suspicious if spies are monitoring the city.”

Leopolt reacts honestly.

“You finished cleaning up, right?”

Around the end of summer, a fire broke out during construction and several men died. It was an unfortunate accident, and although many people gathered, it was written off as a natural occurrence so it didn’t become anything major. The burnt corpses, that had cuts from a blade, were then buried in a graveyard without anyone knowing.

“There are no guarantees. If there are people who we don’t know about, we may have missed an opportunity.... Actually, I’m more worried about the lives of the women we saved.”

There was a woman among the discovered spies, and after she got punished thoroughly as well as getting fucked until she’s crazy about men, she became a prostitute in the city and is now happily serving customers. I sent Christoph to check on her, but it seems she’s enjoying her job, becoming a popular prostitute where hardcore play, nettori<sup>2</sup> and anything in between is allowed. She cracked due to her desire for my cock, so I was able to eliminate all of the spies, and moreover, I want her to be happy too.

“Even including the part where we disguise an attack in my calculations, it will take two days for us to enter the mountain nation’s territory. Luna-san went first, so we should be able to rendezvous with them soon.”

I told the mountain nation of the decisive battle and ordered them to have everyone who can be useful take part. All the warriors from the tribes that I conquered should be coming.

“It’s quite busy, running around here and there, but if things go well, it’ll become an interesting fight.”

“I’ll definitely make it work!”

“I don’t plan so that I can fail.”

Taking the occasional gamble isn’t bad either.



### **–Third Person/Irijina POV–**

10 days later, Southern Border, Treian Army’s Defensive Camp

“Everyone, stop where they are!”

“The large ballista is coming through! If you don’t want your head plucked off, duck down!”

The commanders shout and the soldiers crouch down while lowering their heads. Right after that, a giant bolt soars through the air. That thing the ballista releases while positioned in the back strikes and destroys the fence in front and makes a dull sound as it sticks into the ground.

“The fence is broken! Charge through there!”

A rain of arrows pours down on the soldiers eager to rush through the gap. Half of them instantly get wiped out, and the remaining half do their utmost to retreat while propping up shields over their heads.

On the offense, the Goldonian army of 4200 under the command of Irijina is trying to penetrate the border, while the eastern Treian border defense army defends with around 3000. The attacking side has the slight upper hand in terms of military strength, but the defensive encampments dotted around the area erases that advantage.

The Goldonian archers loose their arrows, but none of them seem to have much impact. Sometimes a flaming rock flung by the catapult would fall on the fortress,

causing yells and screams, but since it takes time to launch the attacks, the fire is snuffed out quickly, preventing it from being a decisive strike.

“Captain Irijina, our attacks are failing. The only thing we can do is concentrate our attacks on one spot to bring down the enemy camp, while retreating with the readiness to lose a few men.”

“No, there’s no need for that. Just try to keep the casualties to a minimum while sporadically targeting the places with fewer people!”

The commander who advised for a solution steps down with an unsatisfied look. That’s a natural reaction, since the strategy to aim for the less populated area with their attacks has already failed three times. The enemy camps are highly cooperative with each other and whenever there is an attack, the enemy would concentrate their forces immediately. An attack on horses would give the enemy less time to react, but there are moats and fences everywhere so the cavalry won’t be able to move freely.

“But the longspear-!”

Having the cavalry run circles around the Treian Kingdom last time taught them a lesson, and now they’re using super long spears that looked around 6 m in length. With those things lined up together, charging at them on horseback is suicidal.

“Have the fatigued soldiers take a break. Switch with the next squad and let them have a turn!”

Seeing the time pass without any progress in the attacks is a situation that would normally make one hold their head in resignation, but Irijina remains composed. In the first place, her objective wasn’t to breakthrough the enemy camps in a flashy manner. Of course, if she could, then she would try to, but from the looks of things, the current situation is clearly not a good one. She doesn’t even think she has the talent to smoothly lead the large army of 4000.

She only thought about the order received from her master to breakthrough this border line of the enemy and the strict command to limit as many casualties as possible and also not get injured herself.

“Don’t worry, the enemy will definitely crumble. We just have to continue attacking.”

The soldiers look anxious but Irijina's face remains filled with confidence.



### **-Third Person/Treia POV-**

Nation of Treia, Most Eastern Region, Pioneer Village

The sun is still high in the sky and the villagers are working hard tending their farms while two men are sitting around a table playing cards. One of them doesn't look much older than 20 and the other one is a middle-aged man who looks close to 40.

"Seems like we've waged war against Goldonia."

"Eeeh... the large nation of Goldonia, huh? Ain't that bad?"

"Yeah, I agree, I travelled to the capital of Goldonia once when I was young and it was seriously cool. The path is all paved with stone and the houses are two-storey buildings so you can't even see the dirt."

"There it is again. That thing where you talk about the time you were young, like several decades ago, it has no relevance now."

"Tch- this cheeky brat has learned how to talk... how's this, my win!"

The middle-aged man throws his cards out and pockets the copper coins on the table.

"Damn! Again? You better not be cheating."

"That's what you call a sage's wisdom, kid."

This area is as remote as you can get where it's near the mountain nation and only about 50 people live, and these two guards don't even have to deal with barbarians and thieves. Their job consists of settling disputes between villagers, protecting the village from lone wolves and monsters, and when things get out of hand, all they need to do is seek help.

"Shit, it's almost harvest time. I might go help out somewhere and earn a little change."

“Oooh, go get ‘em. Do it for my alcohol too.”

The youngster grumbles as he exits the watchtower, and the idle middle-aged soldier lays sideways to try and nap. War is the last thing on their minds and when the enemy reaches such a remote place as this, the outcome would have already been decided.

“Go work your hardest. I’m going to sleep.”

Just as the man mumbles to himself and stretches his arms to lie in the shape of the ‘大’ character, the door swings violently open.

“This is baaad!! Wake up, old man! The barbarians are coming down here!!”

The middle-aged soldier springs up. The most frightening thing in this area is flood, followed by barbarians. He rushes over to the window and sticks his body over the ledge to look over at the mountains. After one long glance, he rubs his eyes, and when he looks a second time, the image didn’t change.

It isn’t several hundreds.

It isn’t a thousand either.

A large group of cavalry easily exceeding 5000 is charging forward as if they’re coming to swallow the village.

Both of them stare dumbfoundedly at the scene unfolding before their eyes. There’s pretty much nothing left they can do. That is what they’re thinking in their hearts.

“Old man... what do we do? Do we contact someone?”

“Don’t be ridiculous... how do we do that in this situation?”

The cavalry pass by the village from both sides and continue westward.

“Hey, hey, you’ve got to be kidding me... look at that.”

The middle-aged soldier points and the youngster’s jaw drops to the ground. The mass army of cavalry thought to be barbarians are waving the black flag of the Goldonian nation.

“Those guys... they came from beyond the mountain nation’s territory.”

“There’s no way! Those are the subhumans who fuck women and eat men, aren’t they!?”

“Didn’t they just come from the east just now?! There’s nobody else but barbarians to the east of this village!”

The middle-aged soldier picks up his spear momentarily, but throws it to the floor soon after.

“This is going to be bad... all the armies are around the border. There’s nobody left from here all the way to the west...”

The pioneer village is located at the absolute far east, but in terms of north-south, it’s located in the middle. If these guys appeared here, that means they’re separated from their allies who are sticking around the northern border.

“...Radov... What do we do?”

The young soldier unusually calls the old man by his name. His voice is clearly showing signs of fear.

“You’re asking what we should do? Well-”

Radov takes the spear from the young soldier and drops it to the floor, handing him a cup filled with alcohol instead.

“There’s nothing we can do. In order to survive, we can only lay here and sleep, hoping we don’t agitate those guys.”

Radov gathers the scattered cards.



## **-Aegir POV-**

“We passed by a pioneer village. Is it fine to ignore it?”

“We don’t have time to worry about it. If they have horses, we’ll steal them, since it’ll be too late for them to make a report on foot.”

The number of soldiers following Celia and I reach 7000. There are 1000 cavalry from the private army and 6000 bow cavalry.

“In this way, they won’t be able to tell where our main force is.”

“Pipi and the others are one with the chief. His hands and feet.”

It’s exactly as Pipi says, since the mountain nation didn’t complain a single time when I asked them to mobilize nearly all of their units. I did tell them if they run out of food, they could let Adolph know though.

“In any case, it really is unmanned here. There are no soldiers here at all.”

“They probably didn’t expect us to pass through the mountain nation’s territory.”

It’s mostly barren and arid land, and not really a place where you could march through. What made it possible for us is that we stored fodder and water at predetermined points beforehand and scouted the area several times to plot the most suitable route for marching.

It wouldn’t have been possible for us without the premise of no interference from the mountain nation and also having them guide us, so naturally Treia would be unable to do this either.

“Leopolt, Irijina seems to be struggling. Take some troops with you and beat their asses.”

“Then, I’ll borrow 1000 bow cavalry.”

Just that little is fine? The enemy stopped Irijina who had 4000.

“When we suddenly appear behind them, they will crumble. It’s sufficient to take an amount capable of threatening pursuit.”

“I see... Pipi, go with Leopolt.”

As soon as the mountain nation separates from me, their obedience to orders will decrease. My women, Pipi and Luna, needs to be with me.

“And also... absolutely don’t make this village into a battlefield.”

It goes without saying that it’s Mireille’s village. Her village is close to the place where Irijina is fighting, so we can’t rough up that area.

“Is it a woman?”

“A woman, is it...?”

“A woman!?”

“Is it a local mistress?”

They’re annoying, just hurry up and get out of here.

And so, my army marches west to invade the nation of Treia without any hindrance of the enemy’s line of defense.



Side Story – Military Flag (before the outbreak of war)

“A flag, huh...?”

The one who starts off the discussion is Celia.

“During the training exercise, the other nobles had their own flags. And the private army is getting larger too, so why don’t we try and make our own?”

It’s not like a flag makes us capable of fighting in a war, but if it’s something that raises



morale, then it might be worth considering.

“Swords and spears are common so it might be hard to recognize your own flag.”

“Well, most nobles who participate in battle have flags like that.”

“Have you thought of anything, Celia?”

“If you don’t mind... how about something like this...”

The picture that Celia drew on the piece of paper is one of a spear-wielding warrior; it’s so well-drawn that I could tell at first glance that it’s me. I think she’s skilled enough to make a living if she went to the city to draw...

“I’m not so shameless as to put a picture of myself on my flag.”

“Right...”

Celia becomes dejected. Nevertheless, the drawing is quite pretty. Is this how Celia sees me?

“What are you talking about?”

Nonna comes over as she must have heard us chatting about something.

“Oh my, a military flag!? How wonderful. It’s not just for battle, but you could hang it up in different places too, so please allow me to draw something.”

And all of us are frozen when she finishes her drawing.

“How is it? With its large, elegant wings, this winged lion is a legendary mythical beast that symbolizes beauty and strength... and its name is-”

“What’s that?”

Hearing Nonna’s voice get loud, Carla also comes over.

“Grif-...”

“Cockroach? Those things are nasty in summer; they have wings and fly all over the place.”

Nonna hits her head against the desk.

“Please don’t associate it together with something so disgusting! This is a beautiful mythical beast!!”

“What!? It’s your fault that the drawing is so ugly! Besides, it has nothing to do with Aegir!”

Oh, it isn’t a caterpillar with wings?... if I say that out loud, Nonna will pout again.

“I’ll draw an appropriate flag for Aegir. If this is on the flag, everyone will be surprised for sure~”

The thing Carla draws quickly and smoothly certainly has a deep connection with me and I remember seeing it before. I saw it pretty recently actually. Yep, everyone will be beyond surprised.

“.....Carla-san.”

“Stupid Carla...”

“Hm? What? It’s well-drawn, right?”

The thing Carla drew is a fully erect cock pointing up towards the sky. If I march with this on my flag, it will definitely attract the most attention.

“If you put something like this on the flag, you will bring shame to him forever!!”

“It’s better than that cockroach!”

“...Both of them are no good.”

Celia has gotten tired of their antics and sighs. Mel comes over while watching the two of the fight, holding her belly and having Miu suck on her tits.

“What’s going on? Oh, a flag.”

Celia urges Mel to take a brush as well, after becoming unconcerned, saying how anything she drew would be better than those drawings the other two did.

“It’s finished. What do you think? I’m not that artistic so it might look awful.”

It is a picture of a plains bathed in the warm rays of the sun with several pigeons flying. Just as she said, it isn’t the best looking, but it is a picture that makes you feel warm and fuzzy and soothes your heart.

“...So, are you going take this flag with you when you go out and kill people?”

She’s right, this picture isn’t suitable for a military flag at all.

After that, more squabbling happened and nothing could be decided on. Just when I thought it’s fine not having a stupid flag, Nonna and Carla rubbed some black dye on the paper.

“It’s fine like this, isn’t it?”

The paper is entirely black on one side and there is no pattern or design on it. It saves effort and time this way too.

“Eeeh, this is boring. Let’s make it a dick.”

“A cockroach is better than such a frightening flag.”

“Rejected, I’m going with this. Celia, I’ll leave the rest to you.”

“Yes, I’ll draw it right away!”

Mel is disinterested in the flag already and after showing the picture to her baby, she rocks her to sleep. And also, Nonna... you admitted in the middle there that what you drew is actually a cockroach.

And that is how the flag of the Hardlett army became a pure black flag.

A little while later, I bring up the topic of the flag when I’m talking with Adolph.

“Isn’t red better than black? It stands out.”

“A red flag...? I don’t have the authority to speak about military flags, but I’m not really fond of red. When I see red, it makes me feel unsettling.”

Hmm, it’s also the color of blood. For a guy who isn’t good with violence, I guess he wouldn’t like it.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Late summer. Wartime.

#### Subordinate Units

Irijina (4200)

Cavalry: 500, Archers: 800, Infantry: 2700, Combat Engineers: 200

Directly Controlled Troops (7000)

Cavalry: 1000, Bow Cavalry: 6000

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant), Irijina (Captain), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Bow Cavalry Commander)

Current Location: Treian Nation, Eastern Region

Accomplishments: None

# CHAPTER 96

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ②

### PASS THROUGH THE FOREST

---

–Aegir POV–

“Treia’s eastern defense force has surrendered.”

It was the first report from Leopolt, who headed to Irijina to provide reinforcements. The eastern defense force had just held off 4000 enemies from the front, but as soon as the 1000 bow cavalry intercepted them and started shooting them from behind, the defense force lost morale and was routed. After the pursuit and annihilation of their forces, the survivors finally surrendered.

“It looks like the soldiers that surrendered have been disarmed and will be brought along by Irijina-san.”

It’s lucky that I have Irijina with me to deal with the prisoners of war. To be honest, they’re really unnecessary since we’re on a tight schedule, but if we abandon them, they might be an annoyance from behind us. If Leopolt was the only one there, they might suddenly disappear.

“We can’t just kill them off either... it hurts for the infantry unit to be late.”

Celia has a complicated look on her face. We intend to march and rendezvous with the squad I entrusted with Irijina, but it seems that we might be even later than expected.

“There aren’t many enemies left on the eastern side. We’ll manage somehow, even if we don’t hurry.”

None of them spoke up but I can see that the bow cavalry and their horses look fatigued. We were marching at a fairly quick pace every day for close to 10 days after all. Even though the horses had feed and water, it was probably a little harsh on their smaller bodies.

“It’s true that the east is as good as captured. However, most of Treia’s important bases

are in the west, and at this pace, it would give them time to respond... And a dense forest called the Erg forest is up ahead, which we can't pass through."

I feel my shoulder twitch.

"If we detour to the north, we'll run straight into the fortress... if we join up with the central army, it would make it meaningless for us to make an assault. It would be nice if we can follow our original plans and detour to the south, but the enemy is probably waiting for us there. If we take too long, we will be isolated."

That forest is there. Celia is talking about something, but I'm not paying attention anymore.



After that, we continue to march slowly for about a week without resistance and when we advance to the point we can see the Erg forest, we successfully meet up with the trailing Leopolt and Irijina.

"My bad, I made you wait quite a bit!"

"It can't be helped, but we probably can't detour to the south of the forest anymore."

Our initial plans were to meet up with Irijina and the infantry after they broke the enemy envelopment, make a quick march around the south of the forest and attack the capital.

If we make an attack using only the cavalry, we wouldn't make a dent in the fortress city in the west. We need the strength of the infantry and the siege weapons.

"According to the report from the scouts, it appears imperial guards have been deployed to the south and are constructing their defensive camps."

As expected, we gave the enemy plenty of time. I'm confident we can still defeat them, but we'll definitely suffer casualties, and unlike the enemy, we can't replenish our forces. It's not the wisest choice.

"In this case, it's best if we put our plan on hold momentarily and join up with the central army by going around to the north."

Leopolt stares briefly at Irijina. It's easy to tell that he probably insisted to kill all the prisoners and march on without them. Irijina becomes a little timid, but she still looks big.

"What if we can get through the Erg forest easily. Will our situation change?"

"Aegir-sama, this forest is a dangerous place where many people have gone missing. There are records of how exploration teams were sent but none of them returned. I am unsure of whether the cause is natural or because of a monster, but it's dangerous to step foot in there!"

"It looks like there is much vegetation growing as well. It doesn't seem like the cavalry would be able to advance, much less an army of this size."

Celia and Leopolt disapproves of my suggestion. Pipi and Luna are shaking their heads to show their opinions as well.

"I said 'what if'. If we get through the forest in a straight line, would our situation change?"

I repeat what I said in a harsher tone.

"It will. We will end up right behind the enemy if we pass through this forest. Because the enemy can't get through the forest, there would be nothing to hinder us and it will become a decisive move that affects the entire war."

I see. I thought the next time I came here would be when I became king or I died, how unfortunate.

"All troops, head towards the center of the forest in single file."

There are no signs of Treia's soldiers in front of us. From the Treian perspective, it's common sense not to enter the forest and they wouldn't think to lead an army here.

"Seriously...?"

"Will we return alive?"



“It’s the captain’s orders...”

A portion of the soldiers, who knew what was going on, complain anxiously, but one stare from me makes them quiet down. It appears they understand which is scarier – entering the demonic forest or getting their skulls split open with a swing of my spear.

The frightened prisoners will be left at the forest’s entrance with a small number of guards. Since we’ve brought them this far already, even if they revolt, they won’t pose any threat.

“Before that though...”

I check the faces of each prisoner one by one. I choose two, grabbing their crotch to confirm the size of their dicks and pick those who look more feminine and have smaller genitals.

“A-as I thought, you’ve gotten bored of women and now moving to men-!!”

“Chief, you can’t do it with guys. You’ll make the mountain god angry.”

“Hardlett-dono, I’ll dress up as a man so you can just pound my ass as much as you want! That’s why you shouldn’t do it with another male!”

“Men, taking turns in the butt...”

No, that’s not what I’m doing.

The girls are making a huge fuss, but I try to calm them down as I make my way to the front of the entire army and advance into the forest.



“The next big tree... to the left of the red tree. It’s a swamp on both sides so don’t stray away from the path I’m taking.”

As expected, the infantry and cavalry move at the same speed in such a dense forest, but even so, everyone is able to march through without much issue.

“Aegir-sama... you know about this forest?”

I guess it's pretty obvious. I know about the watering holes and the places where ripened fruit trees are. This place hasn't changed at all from the past. It's been many years already, but I know this scenery like the back of my hand.

"There's a cliff to the right here. A thicket is hiding it, so be careful."

I've chased after a rabbit and fallen off before.

"Don't eat that apple. Its looks are deceiving and you'll be in pain if you eat it."

It became strange as soon as it was summer. This isn't an apple, but some mysterious fruit that she planted. It tastes horrible and bitter and upsets your stomach.

"A small path...?"

There is an animal trail that stretches in between the trees, and it's narrow enough that it's easily overlooked if you don't pay attention, but if we push our way through, we should be able to see that wasteland.

I was going to just walk straight through. But midway through, I tried calling out to see if I might be greeted kindly. Perhaps she is sleeping soundly with her legs spread out while the sun is still shining.

A small insect lands around my eye and when I used my hand to brush it away, I felt a slight dampness. If I start crying here, would I stay here forever?

"Aegir-sama? What's wrong?"

Celia snaps me back to reality. What am I thinking about? I'm going to become a king and come back proudly to see Lucy. I'm not some pathetic man who only puts the tip in, I want to slam it in all the way to the root.

"Bring the prisoners."

The two prisoners have their hands tied behind their backs and are bound to the tree beside the small path.

"Wh-what are you doing?! Stop it! Untie me!"

“Save me, don’t leave me here!!”

“What on earth?”

“I’m not too fond of excessive torturing...”

Celia looks on doubtfully, while Irijina reproaches me, but I pay them no heed and depart.

“If we want to pass through this forest unharmed, we need that.”

“As I thought, there’s some kind of monster here!?”

She told me to bring sacrifices, so I wonder if Lucy will get mad. Those guys are a present from me to her... I properly chose some pretty boys that she prefers. Although choosing ones with a more feminine face and smaller dicks is because of my jealousy, she’ll be in arousal when she’s having sex as a vampire anyways and I think she’ll go crazy if she embraces manlier guys.

I continue to hear the screams of the prisoners. Sorry, but this is the path she takes when she goes out for a stroll, so that means you guys will die tonight. But before that, they’ll experience the greatest pleasure... If I keep thinking about it, I would want to go back and cut their dicks off, so I’ll just hurry ahead.

“Aegir-sama... refill your water with this pond here.”

“Not here.”

It was said in such a strong tone that it makes Celia flinch.

“It’s poisonous?... I understand. Everyone listen! You can’t drink from here so go further ahead!”

Actually, it’s really delicious. But I couldn’t stand to have the soldiers and horses enter this pond. This is the pond we used to bathe ourselves in.

In the middle of the pond, there is a human-sized rock, and I would use that rock whenever I had sex with Lucy in this pond. Even though I desperately thrust my

hips, she would make fun of me with a smile and continued to urge me to do it faster and rougher.

“Haa...”

I sigh and fondle Celia’s breasts, who is next to me.

“Wha-! Why are you suddenly-!”

“...how sad.”

“Whaa-!!!!”

Celia had teary eyes and stayed mad the entire day, but I could never figure out why.



Lucy is standing naked in front of me. I am also naked and my dick is harder than it has ever been before.

Without a single word, she crouches and crawls her tongue over me. Her fellation techniques are unbelievably pleasant, but I don’t intend to let her continue for long. More than anything, I want to be connected with her and put it as deep as I can go.

I grab my dick, which has gotten so hard that it sticks to my stomach, and rub it against her entrance, then thrust my hips. I feel the sensation of my dick parting her fleshy walls as she smiles and stretches her hands towards me. My dick enters her all the way to the root, even invading to the entrance of her womb, but her provocative smile doesn’t waver one bit.

“UOoooooh!!!”

Right now, it feels like I can burst her stomach with my ejaculation. When I swing my hips as fast as I could, I come to my senses.



“A dream...? My most recent memories...?”

“You were having quite the nightmare. Are you alright?”

Celia looks over at me. I made her worry, huh?

“But why is your dick out?”

The lower half of my body is exposed.

“Well... I thought that it was because it got too hard and tore through my clothes.”

It certainly felt that way in my dream. And I was certainly feeling pleasure. If I stayed asleep for a little longer, I would have had a wet dream.

“Why is it so big... there are no women who could put this in them...”

Celia tries to wrap both her hands around it, but is unable to fully do so. It’s absolutely impossible for her. But I can’t wake up Irijina and Luna, who are resting, since there might be a situation tomorrow where they need to fight.

“It might be impossible to put it in, but I could at least sandwich it.”

Celia gets on top of me, squeezes my cock with her thighs and moves them up and down. I remember when she was still a virgin and she used this technique to pleasure me.

“Celia, wait a minute.”

“Does it feel good? I’ll rub it more then.”

“Uooh!”

“Eh?”

Having been pleasured up until the brink in my dream, it didn’t take long for me to reach my climax. Toppling her over, I switch positions with Celia and bring my

twitching dick in front of her face.

“You want to cum on my face?... go ahead.”

Celia closes her eyes and waits for that moment.

“UOoooooh!!”

Accompanying the incredible pleasure and the ejaculation, I moan and plaster Celia’s face.

“Wah! Wah!”

With more momentum than urinating, my ejaculation continues, spraying her breasts, stomach, and thighs in that order, after running out of room on her face.

“Roll over!”

“You want to get it on my ass too?”

Celia lies on her stomach and I spray it on her back and ass as well. When she’s fully covered with my sperm, I feel a little dizzy and lightheaded.

“Here’s some water. You really cum to much. It’s going to kill you, you know?”

Celia, who handed me some water, is covered from head to toe with my seed and the overwhelmingly strong smell of semen wafts in the air.

“My bad, I couldn’t hold back. Does it stink?”

“It smells really strong. But I don’t really dislike it.”

I hug the sticky, sperm-covered body of Celia and lie on the bed while smiling. After releasing everything I stored up, I feel refreshed and sleepy.

Right before I pass out, Celia mumbles something.

“Who is Lucy?”

The next day when we appear out from the gap in the forest, the Treian army didn't show up in front of us, it was just an uninhabited plains that spreads out before us.

"What do you think, Leopolt? Will things go well?"

"If you told me at the start that we can pass through the forest, I would be able to strategize easier."

I should get Lucy to eat this guy... no, I'd go crazy with jealousy, so I won't. Leopolt continues to speak with a calm look.

"Then, let's follow the plan. We will charge into the enemy fortress from behind. First is the capital city and supply base, Roleil."

This city contains many memories for me as Maria's home town. I hope to avoid as much damage as possible.

"Tell all the troops. We've walked through this demonic forest or whatever. There's literally nothing else to fear, charge forward!"

Oooooooooh—!

The shout of 10,000 people resound and it feels like the earth is shaking. Since we passed through the forest, we are closer to the fortress than our initial plans made us out to be. Everything's coming together. Let us show Erich what we're capable of.

While everyone was getting riled up, Celia was talking with Irijina about something.

"By the way, I wanted to tell you something, Celia-dono..."

"What is it? You're beating around the bush and it's not like you at all."

"It smells... really strong... and your whole body is kind of crusty."

"You stink, Celia."

"You should at least take a bath on the battlefield."

Pipi and Luna also chime in, as Celia screams silently.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Late summer. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 11 200

Infantry: 2700, Cavalry: 1500, Archers: 800, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 6000

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Crusty Adjutant), Irijina (Captain), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Treian Nation, Western Region

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender)



# CHAPTER 97

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ③

### DETOUR THE INVINCIBLE FORTRESS

---

-Third Person/ Treia POV-

Treia Western Region, City of Roleil

Count Fayeltin, who has made a portion of the towns and village, including Roleil, a part of his territory, shouts in a high-pitched voice.

“What is the Eastern Defence Forces doing?! Of all things to surrender completely, even though everyone swore allegiance to fight to the death!”

“Indeed.”

“They’re really disloyal and unforgivable.”

“This is something deserving a thousand deaths.”

“The enemy is probably close to Erg... the glory of Treia’s army has also fallen.”

The source of his bad mood is not limited to this. He has been a prominent feudal lord of this region up until now, holding a large amount of power, and his family name is quite well-known as well. But with the deterioration of relations between Goldonia, the situation was turned on its head; Marquess Dunois, the prime minister, is stressing defense while the military officials within his territory are throwing their weight around.

“The commander of the northern fortress was originally supposed to be me as well, so why is that senile old fool in charge!?”

“Indeed.”

“They’re really unbelievable fools.”

“This is something laughable.”

The Count purposely does not use its official name, the Majino fortress. He is the commander responsible for providing supplies to that fortress, and although his standing is the same, he is unavoidably seen and treated as the subordinate of the Majino fortress’s commander.

“If it’s that old fool, there’s no telling when that fortress will be broken through. When that happens, my territory will instantly be invaded!”

“Indeed.”

“It’s really a worrying chain of events.”

“This is something frightening.”

The Count himself doesn’t have any experience leading an army, and Count Majino is a specialist in defense, protecting the land from the repeated invasions of Arkland, so being a soldier is something he hasn’t thought about.

“Baron Bakka, Baron Doaho, Baronet Oroka. I’m going to make inspections, follow me!”<sup>1</sup>

“How splendid.”

“It’s really wonderfully dedication.”

“This deserves much respect.”

What he can do now is only to appear frequently in front of the soldiers, perform various duties in supplying, speak out and make his existence known.

Despite it being their own territory, the four of them inspect the town with guards, and while they were getting praise from those they attracted, one soldier on the watchtower shouts loudly.

“A single horse is coming this way!”

The Count and his three followers look at each other.

“The enemy? No, there’s no way they would come by themselves. A messenger from the imperial guards deployed by the forest... don’t tell me they have been defeated as well. What do you guys think?”

“““I don’t know!”““

The one riding the horse arrives at the gate, but instead of the sound of the gate opening, he shouts in a loud voice.

“Urgent report! The enemy has gotten through the Erg forest and is already nearby! There’s no time, so prepare your defenses immediately!!”

The messenger screams as if his life depends on it, but the Count and his followers are more shocked than hurried.

“They broke through the Erg forest? There’s no way they could do that...”

The soldiers don’t believe something so sudden either.

“If they detoured to the forest, they should have fought with the imperial guards. Even if they lost by some chance, it would take them some time, and the messenger should have come from the imperial guards.”

They couldn’t imagine the man outside to be one of the imperial guards.

“Which means it might be a disturbance strategy by the enemy.”

If it’s a single cavalry, they might have snuck past the imperial guards in the dead of night.

“We’ll capture and interrogate-...”

The Count did not finish what he was going to say. It’s because all the soldiers that climbed on the watchtowers are shouting like crazy.

““Enemy attack—!! An enormous amount of cavalry! They’re heading straight for us!!”“

“What are you saying-...”

The soft sound of rumbling gradually gets louder. For those in the army, it’s a sound they’ve all heard before – the sound of warhorses performing the march of death.

“Move it!!”

The Count climbs up the watchtower and pushes the soldiers out of his way. What he saw when he reached the top is a scene out of a nightmare; several thousand cavalry are charging towards him in several dozen columns. Not much can be seen behind them due to the massive dust cloud they are kicking up. The eyes that look on with fear are also estimating their numbers, but he definitely did not think it was such an unreasonable amount.

“C-close the gates!! I don’t care if you abandon the ones outside!!”

It was clear that there would be nothing left they could do if he let even a tenth of the approaching cavalry into the city. The soldiers are also moving as fast as possible, closing the gate immediately and preventing them from jumping in from the front gates.

The walls of the city Roleil are somewhat built for war with a portion being reinforced, but the fortress to the north is known more as the main linchpin in the defense. Even so, the Count cannot do anything but as much as he can to hold on and wait for backup.

“You guys should hurry and take command too! Lead your soldiers!”

“Awawawa”

“Hiiiiieee”

“Oyoyoyo”

The three followers’ legs gave out and they fell flat on their bottom. When the three of them proved useless, the Count was about to take direct control but then...

An explosive sound and then the sound of something crumbling and falling down. The Count suppressed his instinct to not want to look back but when he turned his eyes to the source of the sound, there were chips of wood splintered everywhere and a large

hole was made in the outer walls.

“Wh-... what the-...”

The soldier stares blankly at the hole and he wasn't even able to finish what he was saying before another roar resounds and opens up a large hole in another place.

The soldiers distance themselves from the wall that basically could not serve its purpose anymore, and the herd of cavalry charge through the destroyed parts.

“Something like this... is... unbelievable...”

The voices of the Count who looked up at the sky dumbfoundedly, and his three followers were drowned out by the sound of the hooves.



### **-Aegir POV-**

“A large hole has been opened in the walls. The spear cavalry have successfully infiltrated the city.”

I can hear Leopolt's emotionless voice sound a little worked up too. And more importantly, that iron barrel didn't break.

“We forced it into the wagon after all. I was somewhat worried.”

The infantry that accompanied the siege weapons are trailing behind us. If we attack with the infantry, Roleil should fall easily, but it'll turn the city into a sea of flames. Maria's house and mother is in the city too, so I would like to capture the city quickly and load some of that powerful stuff<sup>2</sup> if possible.

“Have them continue firing. It's better if the mouth of the entrance is larger. Don't hit our allies.”

“I will be careful.”

Leopolt swings his arm down and the sound of the third shot roars. It must have hit the watchtower as the Treian soldiers are jumping off while the tower crumbles, and

makes snapping sounds.

“I’m going too.”

“Haa, again? Lord Hardlett, I want you just to sit back though.”

Don’t say that. There’s nothing more boring than to watch a festival as it happens from the back.

“Aegir-sama is heading out. Escort unit, follow him!”

Celia shouts and 30 heavy cavalry come along with me. Because she’s worried about me charging in by myself, she chose 30 people, from the cavalry of the private army of all people, to be my guards. I thought Leopolt wouldn’t allow for 30 of the important heavy cavalry to be designated exclusively to me, but he acknowledges that it would be better than having the commander die on him.

The soldiers and horses which make up the escort squad have good builds and they excel at fighting, and although only a few of them are equipped with spears and bowguns, they are some of the most powerful in the unit. By the way, Celia’s small stature really stands out when she’s amongst them.

Accurately speaking, the escort unit has 32 people, including Celia and one other person – Christoph. He was thrown out of his former unit since he didn’t prove useful, but after begging me in tears, he joined my squad, though he is the weakest. Celia told me that if there’s an opportunity, she would let him die in battle.

“Let’s go!”

As we head towards the city, several soldiers appear from out from one of the large holes opened in the walls and stand in front of us. They have some courage to oppose us in this situation. I send one soldier’s spear flying, pierce him in the stomach and fling him away. Another one is thinking about taking some distance from me, but gets knocked back by Celia’s horse from the side.

“Don’t kill the residents! I won’t tolerate setting fire to the city either, kill only the soldiers!”

An armored soldier charges at me, but I lop his head off, knocking his torso to where

the other soldiers are.

“Hiyh!”

“In one blow...”

The small fry soldiers lose morale and abandon their spears to run away. That’s right, if you don’t resist me, this city won’t be destroyed.

“Seeeiyyaa!!”

With a fierce grunt, a knight fully equipped in armor rushes at me with his spear pointed at me. That reminds me, there’s a competition where this sort of thing happens. His spear looks thick and made just for thrusting and doesn’t look like there’s a sharp edge to it.

After the sound of clashing metal rings out, only the enemy knight’s horse runs off. The knight’s spear thrusts in my chest... to be precise, thrusts just before my chest, as it is being held by my hand. The enemy is holding the handle of his spear while struggling in midair with a face of disbelief.

I just grabbed the charging enemy’s spear and picked him up though<sup>3</sup>... He didn’t let go of the handle so he didn’t fall.

I lower the spear to the ground to let him down, then the knight throws away his sword and kneels. I thought he was going to draw it and kill me; what a close call.

“He caught a charging spear with his hands?”

“Monster...”

“He’s not an opponent we can win against!”

The knight pointing his spear behind me and his soldiers all abandon their weapons and run away. It looks like there is no one else to oppose us here.

The city’s outer perimeter is pretty much controlled, so the fighting shifts to the city area, the noble area and the feudal lord’s mansion. It’s not like Roleil has many troops to begin with and they aren’t heavily armed either, but they’re fighting stubbornly. Not

burning the city when we attacked is a big factor contributing to that, but they're still fighting well for a small group of soldiers.

"Release your arrows! 10 volleys!"

That final resistance, the unit protecting the feudal lord's mansion, doesn't have long before the 500 bow cavalry's arrows – 10 shots each, totalling 5000 arrows – rain on them and annihilate their forces, virtually ending the battle in an instant.

"It's over?"

"Seems like it."

Celia stands beside me covered in blood. Due to her pleasure of being able to fight alongside me, she turned five people into a bloodbath. The escort unit was expectedly powerful and was able to flawlessly finish off over 100 enemies.... No, only Christoph got scratched by a spear, fell off his horse and bumped his head and is now resting. He's really such a useless guy. Although that's interesting in its own right.

The escort unit dismounts from their horses and enters the feudal lord's mansion with me, and we walk all the way to the reception hall in front of the soldiers, who have stopped resisting. When we reach the room, we come face to face with a fully armored noble.

He looks to be middle-aged and he isn't wearing a helmet, but his entire body is covered with a thick armor. A beard decorates his face and his hair is neat, but he doesn't appear to be that strong to me.

"Barodd Fayeltin, Count of the Treian Kingdom! State your name!!"

"Aegir Hardlett, Viscount of the Goldonian Kingdom. Are you the feudal lord?"

I thought I heard him say 'Aegir?' but it didn't come from the noble in front of me.

"Very well! In honor of the house of Fayeltin, I request a one-on-one fight."

With a clank, the Count points his sword at me. However, the tip of the sword is wavering and he doesn't look comfortable moving in his armor. Clearly, he doesn't know how to handle a sword and he isn't used to wearing armor.



“Please wait, Count!! Hardlett... -dono has come to this town before, hasn’t he!? “

A brawny man interrupts from the side. That hoarse voice and rough appearance is unforgettable. He’s Glock, the guard captain of Roleil, who rewarded me for the hungry wolf suppression and tried to recruit me.<sup>4</sup> Now that I think about it, it’s natural for him to be here. This is nostalgic and all but it’s not like I can catch up with him now.

“Thanks for taking care of me back then. I never imagined we would become adversaries.”

“...Your surname is from that time’s... I guess that’s fate.”

If we talk any further, it would be rude to the Count. I turn my attention back to him, but Glock walks in front of the Count.

“Count Fayeltin! This is also fate; let me be your representative in th-”

“You won’t!!”

Unlike the high-pitched voice he was using previously, this powerful voice stuns Glock.

“This land is protected by my ancestors, it isn’t related to you, who’s just the guard captain.... protect the residents, but your duty if I’m defeated, is to surrender.”

The Count readies his sword again. He has good intentions, but it doesn’t seem like this will be a contest at all. Maybe I’ll just knock him out.

“Lord Hardlett, no need to hold back. To a noble, their territory is their life, so know that if you don’t kill me, you won’t obtain this land!”

Fumu... if he has that much resolve, then it would be rude of me to hold back. He doesn’t have the skill to back it up, but I don’t dislike his determination.

“Christoph, lend me your sword.”

It would be unfair to use my spear or Dual Crater. At the very least, I’ll use the same weapon as him.

I hold the sword with only my right hand, while the Count readies his sword with both hands and sizes me up with his eyes.

“Duuoooooooooh-!!”

The Count raises a shout and emits a spirited voice while charging at me and swinging his sword down. Those movements were really slow and made him really defenseless.

I easily parry his strike and destroy his balance, repelling his sword above his head. Then, I make a single strike sideways.

With a thump, the Count’s head falls and his torso collapses on the spot. I swing the sword to get rid of the blood before bringing the sword in front of my face and bowing slightly. Since he showed me his guts and how prepared he was for death, he deserves a bow from me at least.

At the same time, the surrounding soldiers and nobles, as well as Glock, throw their swords away, take off their helmets and kneel on the ground.

“It is our complete defeat.”

“Really unbelievable military prowess.”

“We deserve this submission.”

I ignore those three nobles who are incessantly mumbling something, then tell Glock to have all the soldiers in the town surrender and disarm themselves.

In only two hours and not much fighting, Roleil falls, and the Majino fortress loses its supply base.



**-Third Party/ Treia POV-**

Three days later, Majino Fortress, Central Fort

“The Goldonian army is concentrating their forces in the middle.”

“Don’t get flustered, have the sixth division return fire. Loose the arrows continuously and exhaust them.”

“The third division encampment is on fire!”

“Don’t worry. Calmly extinguish the flames and rebuild the roof after.”

Count Majino is taking command himself, since he has his own name attached to the fortress. The way he leads isn’t anything fancy nor does it involve much energetic shouting, but he gives accurate and appropriate orders in response to his men’s various reports. The calm demeanor and long-standing track record in defensive battles of the old veteran gives his men a great sense of security.

An army of a size hardly seen – over 80 000 of Goldonia’s central army and lords’ armies – are deployed on the central plains in front of them, but the old veteran shows no signs of panicking. Even with burning rocks and oil pots being hurled at him by over a hundred catapults and receiving a rain of tens of thousands of arrows, none of the fort’s functions whatsoever are destroyed.

“You have to be calm first; if something happens, take a second to think. This fortress will not waver so quickly.”

Unlike a field battle, the situation in a siege is not so fickle. Endurance and precise planning means everything.

With a roar, burning rocks destroy the roofs on top of the fort that were constructed to shield from arrows. But nobody panics from seeing the crumbling roofs.

Small holes in the floor on top of the fort have wooden stakes that support platforms that are used to raise the wooden roofs. Most arrows that reach the top of the fort have flown a long distance in a parabolic trajectory. As long as there is a covering, the soldiers can drastically lower the number of casualties in the shootout. It won’t be able to withstand an attack from a catapult or ballista, but if it breaks, it can be trashed and rebuilt. Considering the simple structure of the roof, which only requires hammering in, it just takes a few minutes before it get restored to its original state.

“Count Majino! Even with such a fierce attack these few days, the fort hasn’t even budged an inch!”

“On the contrary, the enemy has suffered many casualties in the span of those three times and retreated! Shouldn’t we go out and pursue them?”

The old veteran laughs cheerfully and shakes his head.

“Haha, that’s dangerous thinking. Things are going well now and you want even more; that’s what will ruin you.”

He calls him over to overlook the big picture through the window and talks to him kindly till the end.

“Time is our friend. The ones who need to take a risk is the enemy, not us. We just have to see through the ventures the enemy takes and crush them, then victory will be within our grasp.”

“Yessir, I apologize for saying too much.”

“It’s fine, you can’t be called a youngster otherwise. You can calm down once you get old.”

The Goldonian army gathers their forces in the center and strives to brute force their way through. However, most of the arrows from the offensive side gets stopped by the roofs and are unable to do any damage, while conversely, the arrows loosed by the soldiers in the fort are aimed downwards, bringing down Goldonian soldiers with relentless force. Sporadically, the catapults blow away the roof and soldiers all together, but even so, it doesn’t make much of a dent in the sturdy fort. The tall towering walls have several holes, in which bowguns are stuck out of the purposely created openings, take the lives of even more Goldonian soldiers.

Some soldiers manage to cling to the fort’s walls, but since the holes are too small to enter, they have no choice but to climb ladders. While doing so, they would have to bathe in an endless flood of arrows.

When a certain number of soldiers cling to the walls, the arrows stop and the windows for the bowguns close. The highest window is opened and tremendous amount of flaming oil is poured down, burning the ladder-climbing soldiers to death without leaving any trace of them behind.

“We fended off Goldonia’s fourth attack!”

“But the enemy cavalry is trying to bypass through the forest to the east.”

No matter how sturdy the fortress, there will always be a weak point. Goldonia's cavalry will aim for the part where there is nothing but fences surrounding the bare fort, where no walls have been constructed due to terrain.

“Count Majino!”

“I have placed a squad of spearmen there. No need to worry.”

The cavalry try to instantly pass through the opening in between the moats, but as soon as the lead horses reach the gap, the earth crumbles below their horses' feet. The following horses stumble and get tangled with each other, causing chaos to occur.

In fact, there was no gap in the moats; a thin plank was placed over a hole and just dirt was piled on top. It wouldn't be a problem for a few infantry, but for a large army or horses, they'd fall instantly into the bottomless pit. Spearmen appear from hidden locations one after the other and repel the confused cavalry, killing all the soldiers that have fallen in the hole. The infantry that followed right behind the cavalry receive a rain of arrows and end up retreating painfully.

“It's not something to get flustered about. If you deal with it calmly, you will definitely be able to stop the enemy.”

The elder Count's men were embarrassed and making warped faces, but quickly smile again.

“Anyways, has the messenger we sent to Roleil not come back yet?”

The old veteran's sole concern is the issue of resupply. Arrows and oil should be coming everyday from Roleil, but they haven't come since the day before yesterday. There is a warehouse for supplies within the fort so they aren't in trouble in the short term, but it's not something they can ignore for long either.

“Count Fayeltin hates me... that's why I don't want to talk about this.”

“It would be dumb if supplies stop because of hate towards the Count. Although it shouldn't be that way...”

“This is a serious national problem, so I hope it’s nothing but a trivial mistake.”

With noisy clattering, the soldiers burst into the command room. Their state of panic contrasts greatly with the calm old veteran and his men.

“Give an accurate report calmly...”

The old veteran smiles gently to try and calm the soldiers, but the soldiers interrupt, even if they have to be rude.

“A portion of the enemy has bypassed the Erg Forest and attacked Roleil!! The town has fallen, and Count Fayeltin has died in battle!! I repeat, Roleil has fallen!! “

The subordinates lose themselves for an instant, but just as their revered superior said, they calmed their hearts and turned to the old veteran.

“Count Majino... how should we respond?”

The old veteran’s eyes are wide open and is staring blankly with his jaw dropped. His eyes look disturbed and there is no trace of calmness as he reaches his trembling hand to the cup of tea on the table. That hand knocks over the cup and it shatters on the floor.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Late summer. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 11 200

Infantry: 2700, Cavalry: 1500, Archers: 800, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 6000

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Captain), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Roleil

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil

# CHAPTER 98

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ④

### THE PREPARED STAGE

---

#### -Third Person POV-

Three wagons and several dozen cavalry approach the Majino fortress, the fortress line that Treia is so proud of, from the south. Quicker than the garrisoned soldiers could shoot arrows, the horses cut away and throw torches in the wagons. Oil must have been sprinkled ahead of time, as the wagons instantly burst into flame, creating a massive fire. A special dye burns and a red smoke billows upward.

The cavalry heads back south and leaves, letting the wagons continue to burn. A soldier runs out of the castle to extinguish the flames, but the wagons and torch combined to make too large a flame, so the fire doesn't disappear that easily. The red smoke rises high up in the sky and becomes visible from a long distance.



#### -Goldonia POV-

At the same time, Goldonian Central Army Camp

The war council continues with a heavy atmosphere as the siege battle makes no progress and only sacrifices are piling up. Occasionally, a military official's angry roar resounds, but no conclusion is reached. The event that stops such an unfruitful discussion is the billowing of red smoke from three locations.

Hearing the report of the red skyrocket, the first general who jumped straight out of the tent was Erich. To confirm what he saw, he closed his eyes tightly and reopened them.

"Gentlemen, this futile debate has lost its meaning."

Everyone focuses their gaze on Erich.



“Lord Hardlett has succeeded in detouring the Majino fortress from the east. The fortress is isolated and the supply line is severed.”

‘Oohs’ echo from all who are present. Some of the military officials don’t seem to believe such an unrealistic detour happened, but the signal smoke is rising up from the south of the fortress, no matter how they looked at it. Regardless of what theory was applied, they have no choice but to acknowledge that Viscount Hardlett and his army has circled around the south side of the fortress.

“Gentlemen, it will soon be the fifth all-out attack. Why not let our smoke signal be the burning of their fortress?!”

The commanders spread the news of the successful detour to their soldiers and the mood of the camp is instantly revived.



### **-Third Person/ Treia POV-**

At the same time, Majino Fortress, Central Fort

“...Commander, it appears some unidentified cavalry approached from the south and burned some wagons before retreating.”

The old general continues looking down as he advises the soldier.

“You don’t have to worry that much about it. A separate unit from Goldonia just raised a smoke signal. This phenomenon should also be seen clearly by the enemy to our front. The all-out attack will be coming soon... go get ready.”

The atmosphere of the command room is strangely dark, even though they should have just fended off the fourth attack. In addition to having someone circle behind them, their fortress is now completely isolated. As long as the enemy isn’t defeated, the supplies won’t come. Regardless of how sturdy the fortress is, they can’t fight if they run out of arrows and if they run out of food, the soldiers will run away.

“We’ve been extracting food from our storehouse with the assumption of receiving a resupply after all...”

There are 40 000 soldiers accumulated in the Majino fortress. There isn't much surplus food in Treia and it's impossible to instantly gather food for 40 000 soldiers to eat for several months.

Many soldiers eat and drink everyday. The goddess that initially smiled upon the old veteran has now been stolen<sup>1</sup> by Goldonia. Even if he doesn't do anything, everything will catch up to him in an instant.

"Count Majino, the enemy doesn't have many troops. If we deploy some of our soldiers and chase them out, we can connect our supply line."

"I've considered that. But the reason that the farmers can fight like full-fledged conscripted soldiers is because of the protection of the fortress. The ones who have detoured around us should be Lord Hardlett and his army, the one who went wild in the previous conflict. If we clash with him and his powerful cavalry in a field battle, what would happen..."

"But if we continue to let this go on, it will only be a matter of time before the fortress falls!"

"According to the scouts, his military strength is around 10 000, where cavalry make up over half of that number. If we are to put up a fight, we need at least 20 000. If we send that many towards him, we won't be able to hold off the enemy in front of us. If we fight, the fortress will fall right now!"

The old general didn't mention anything because it would influence morale, but he has doubts about his own leadership skills. He is confident in defensive battles involving the defense of a fortress and fending off enemy attacks, but field battles are a different story. The state of battle can change at the drop of a hat, and the slightest hesitation will invite defeat. When he was young, he participated in wars against Arkland and has experience as a commander, but his track record in field battles were horrible.

Even if he had some advantage, Lord Hardlett is a brave general excelling in field battles, so he couldn't imagine winning against him in a battle on an open field.

"But there is hope."

"Reinforcements from the capital...?"

The young officer sounds a little skeptical. It's true that only reinforcements could reverse the miserable situation of holing up in the fortress and fighting. But there are only about 3000 soldiers left in the capital, and that is the minimum amount required to keep the fortress city functioning, so none of them can be moved. That means the only reliable ones are the imperial guards from the south, who will have to be brought back quickly, and there should only be around 5000 of them. Although they are well-equipped and skilled, it is doubtful at best whether they can chase off the separate unit of Goldonia that reaches 10 000 in number.

"That is... not all."

The old general forces a smile.



At the same time, Treia Kingdom Capital, Trisnea

"We have to do something to save the Majino fortress from being isolated!"

"But where will we get the military strength?"

"The imperial guards will be arriving soon! Although they are inferior in number, if they fight desperately-"

"You think we can do something with feeling alone?!"

"There are 40 000 in the fortress, you know? We can take 10 or 20 thousand and save Roleil ourselves..."

"If we do that and they get past our main force, close to 10 000 soldiers will come flooding in! We'll be finished then."

"It's the fortress commander's ability to do something about that! Perhaps we have evaluated Count Majino's ability too highly..."

Before the complicated issue turns into an argument of who's fault it is, the prime minister steps forward to the king.

“Oh great King. Our army and fortress stands in the face of trouble.”

While the king is looking down at the prime minister, his eyes are looking about restlessly.

“To be able to get through the Erg forest... I heard Hardlett is the reincarnation of a wolf, but isn't he really just a demon of some sort?”

The prime minister has no time to entertain the king's fairy tale, so he ignores him and continues what he was saying.

“If this continues, the Majino fortress will exhaust its supply of food and arrows and then fall into enemy hands. Before that happens, we should defeat the enemy occupying Roleil.”

“Is- is making peace with Goldonia not an option? I'm fine with surrendering some land, you know?”

The prime minister silently screams ‘impossible’ in his mind. Considering the actions Goldonia took after the demise of Arkland in the war, their intention is to swallow Treia whole; they wouldn't agree to let Treia live in peace.

“According to one of the spies I sent, after occupying the land, Goldonia is teaming up with those unfaithful to Arkland and killing everyone they find from Treia.”

“I-is that so?... then I guess we can't make peace.”

Of course that wasn't the truth; it was just a lie the prime minister created to prevent the king from causing trouble from advocating love and peace.

“But the fact we don't have enough forces on hand is the truth, the surrounding nations are- “It's close to harvest season and-” “It's hard to determine which of the two is better from what he says and-” -should participate in the war and compare them.”<sup>2</sup>

Everyone has muddled expressions in this desperate situation.

“But as a result of repeated negotiations with the Magrado Dukedom, I succeeded in pulling some reinforcement from them.”

The conference room became lively and even the King got up from his seat.

“How wonderful! So reinforcements will come!? So how many of them? And when??”

“There will be 10 000, so if they combine with the imperial guards, they should put up a decent fight... and about the time.”

Everyone gulps. If he says two months, the desperate situation will not change.

“At the start of the war, they have been heading towards us via Stura and have already arrived at the south of the capital by boat.”

The chaotic noise turns into angry roars.

“Wha-?!”

“No way!”

“You allowed forces from another nation to land in the country without the King’s approval?”

“Prime minister... do you have any idea what you did?”

“This is an invitation for foreign threats! You and your family will get the death penalty.”

“It is an immediately executable offense!”

The prime minister doesn’t falter from the raging nobles, even going so far as to awakening a great yet quiet anger in the king.

“The country’s survival hinges on this crisis we are facing now; if I am executed now, the reinforcements from Magrado will not take action and this country will be swallowed by Goldonia.”

“...Prime minister, if these reinforcements are able to save the Majino fortress, then you will be hailed as the hero and saviour of the country, and the sin of inviting foreign threats will be offset. But in the case that they fail, you and your family will be given the original sentence.”

“I am fully aware.”

The imperial conference finishes in an unbelievably tense atmosphere. In order to see this decisive battle of destiny to the end, the prime minister heads over to meet the Magrado Army of 10 000 on the King's orders.



### **-Aegir POV-**

At the same time, Roleil

“Aaah—!! I'll die! I'm dyinggg!!”

“A woman won't die from something like my dick. How is this spot?”

“Hiiiiih—!! It's so thick and it's rubbing such a good spot! It feels too good that I could die from cumming!!!”

“You'll cum from this spot!? There, cum then!!”

I thrust my meat rod into the depths of her insides several times before ejaculating. The woman covers her face with her hands and screams like a beast. What a sensitive whore.

“Aaaaaah!! Hiiiih!! Aah, ahh-! Ooooooh... ooooh.....”

The woman who is sitting on top of me while I'm crossing my legs throws her head back as if her neck broke, her eyes roll back and she falls over. Just as she said, it looks like she died, but she's still breathing. She's continuing to squirt even now, so if she doesn't drink water, she might get dehydrated.

This prostitute was brought to me by one of those bumbling three nobles. She looked enthusiastic so I embraced her, but she has an incredibly sensitive body.

“Aegir-sama... are you finished?”

Celia enters the room and glares at the women who's bent like a shrimp.

“Aah, that woman felt good... it’s about time the smoke rose, right?”

With a slump, my soft dick is pulled out of the woman’s crotch.

“Yes. If you looked, the central army is commencing their assault now.”

In these past few days, me and my entire unit are staying in Roleil while recovering our strength. That’s because we’ve been endlessly marching through the mountain nation’s territory, so the soldiers have built up a considerable amount of fatigue. The town is overflowing with food and supplies meant for the fortress, so the 10 000 troops should get nourished plentifully.

“As long as we remain here, the fortress won’t receive their supplies. The majority of their soldiers should be resting.”

Treia is sporadically sending out wagons from the capital to supply Majino somehow but they get caught by the cavalry in our patrol net and gets turned into a bloodbath.

Without the large supply point in Roleil, it is impossible to transport the necessary goods to maintain such a large fortress well.

“The other side is in quite the deadlock.”

I fondle the fallen woman’s breasts gently. She shouldn’t be conscious, but she’s letting out a voice that lets me know she’s feeling good.

“Yes, on the contrary, it means that we do not have much to do. Even though we have so many siege weapons, we can’t use them on the capital.”

It might be interesting to try and bust through the fortress from the back, but if they take back Roleil during that opening, I’ll be left with nothing. It’s best just to wait here and fuck some women.

“Nonetheless, that commander of the fortress is quite conservative. He knows that if things continue at the rate they’re going, he’ll be in a pinch. I thought he would divide his forces and send some of them at us.”

“He might be afraid of Erich... He might also be one of those guys who don’t take risks and try their damndest to not stir up trouble.”

Or perhaps he has not been driven completely in the corner yet. He might be hanging on to some form of hope.

“If it’s in the form of reinforcements, won’t things get interesting?”

I take my hand away from the woman and put my clothes on. She gropes around for me and stretches out her hand desperately. Sorry, but this was a one day thing; go find a nice man.

“My, my, if it isn’t Hardlett-sama! How did you find that woman? She is this town’s highest class prostitute...”

The noble who introduced the prostitute to me was waiting for me outside the room. He’s rubbing his hands faster than anything I’ve seen before.

“Baron Bokke, was it? She was good, now I’m politely returning her.”

“It’s Bakka. So, now, regarding peace against us in the future as well...”

“As long as you don’t resist, you won’t be harmed. Besides that, everything else is collateral from the war; nothing has been decided.”

Baron ‘Baka’ makes an unsatisfied face, but there’s no need to worry about him. After slaughtering the Count, I pointed my sword at his three followers, including him and asked if they were going to resist as well.

One of them shouted his mother’s name and burst into tears, the other one wet himself, and this guy shit himself. Being such hardcore cowards, they don’t have the balls to try anything, and they can’t get prisoners or citizens to follow them either.

The three of them seem to have their own special skills: arranging for women, wine, and famous street performers. Maybe God has made a mistake in handling their births. If they had talent in performing taiko<sup>3</sup>, they might have been able to show off their skills.

“Move!”

The man, who Celia yells at, hurriedly shuffles to the corner of the hall. An adult man shouldn’t be scared of a 17-year old girl...





I enter the feudal lord's mansion along with Celia and walk to the dining room that is being used as a conference room. Leopolt and the others are already gathered inside.

"Lord Hardlett, the smoke signal was shot up without a problem. Now, the Majino fortress cannot send a large force towards us."

"I see. Is there anything else to consider?"

Leopolt spreads out a large map on the table and places several soldier-shaped objects. Sorry for making fun of you, I thought you were playing with toy soldiers.

"First, the Majino fortress has to face the central army in the front. We are blocking off their communications with the capital so they can't effectively send soldiers in our direction."

Yep, I know that part.

"Next is the fact that scouts discovered the 5000 guards close to the Erg forest are advancing to the capital from the south."

"5000? Then it might have been better if we crushed them during that time."

"We would lose time then.... And also, looking at the numbers, I don't think they will be doing anything proactive."

Probably not. They are a group who holes up in their defensive structures after all. They are at an absolute shortage if they try to recapture a city that has twice the number of troops they do.

"And finally this."

Leopolt places one of the objects on the small port city to the south of Trisnea.

"Troops in such a place?"

Celia speaks up without thinking. Placing excess troops in a small port city away from the battlefield is definitely suspicious.

“It was discovered by the scouts’ extensive searching. Not many details are known, but they shouldn’t have more than one or two thousand troops there.”

“Which means it isn’t Treia.”

“Yes, Stura or Magrado... most likely.”

“It’s not Stura. That country only has mercenaries, and if there were any recruitment signs up, the merchants would know about it.”

Claire said that the country only hired a few here and there. It isn’t something on a larger scale.

“You’re right. Magrado, unlike the other nearby nations, are considerably cautious about our nation. They probably want Treia to win so that Goldonia’s national power will drop even a little.”

“So will we do battle with this army?”

“Probably... except in this situation, Magrado will undoubtedly be confused too.”

What does he mean? I don’t get it, so I guess I’ll rub Irijina’s big ass for now.



### **-Third Person POV-**

A few days later, South of Trisnea, Magrado Dukedom Army Camp

“There’s no reserve army, you say!?”

The one who is shouting right now is a Count of the Magrado Dukedom and the supreme commander of the expeditionary force, commander Radgalf.

“The enemy forces are pushing up against the fortress line so we don’t have much room to leave forces behind...”

As if being pressured by an intense force, the one who answered evasively is prime

minister Dunois, who just arrived.

“Leaving forces idle and leaving a reserve army are two different things. If we don’t have a reserve army, if they breakthrough or detour, then our entire front will collapse immediately! Isn’t the primary reason for the current issue the same!?”

“R-right now the 5000 imperial guards are heading this way, so they can join up with you...”

“If you send troops out after they returned on such a tight schedule, they will not be able to fight the way you think. Soldiers are different from tools.”

When Radgalf saw the prime minister look down, he secretly let out a sigh. Before the war, when they repeatedly discussed about contriving reinforcements, he seemed to be a skilled person, but when the war started, his amateurish ways stood out. Having a family lineage of military background and being involved with the army since he was around 10 years old, he kept seeing things he couldn’t believe was actually happening.

The original plan was for the fortress to hold back the enemy. If their side was advantageous, he would pounce on the exhausted enemy, but if they were at a disadvantage, he would appear as reinforcements for the fortress.

That plan was crushed as soon as the enemy’s large detour became obvious, but even so, if the enemy only has 10 000, he still believed that he could defeat them by cooperating with Treia’s reserve forces.

Things become tougher since there is no reserve army. He can’t expect much from the 5000 imperial guards who exhausted themselves just to come back. In that case, he has no choice but to settle with both sides having the same 10 000 forces.

“I beg you... If I lose this fight, my country will be doomed.”

The prime minister bows deeply to Radgalf, who is of lower social status and position. No matter the reason, if Goldonia takes over Treia, it will be against the wishes of his home nation. If they expand their territory, they will become an opponent that Magrado can no longer stand up to.

“So this is our decisive battle...?”

Radgalf has escaped death many times before. If he failed even once, he would not be standing here right now. This time is simply even strength; he can't say he'll win for certain, but it isn't impending defeat either. This is where he should gamble.

"It's unavoidable. We'll have to go at our current strength. We'll have the imperial guard follow for now."

"And also send a messenger to the fortress to send soldiers to perform a pincer attack..."

Radgalf nods silently. Reinforcements that may miss the timing to attack and have unreliable communication are worthless, but it doesn't hurt to try and request something from them.

"The pitch black flag that Hardlett is waving... the demonic wolf's army, what a worthy opponent."

"I'm counting on you! My family's future is on the line..."

While warding off the prime minister's words, he turns to his soldiers and raises his sword.

"Gentlemen, it's time to depart. The enemy is the brave general who made a name for himself in the Arkland war, Lord Hardlett and the army he's leading."

The soldiers don't falter even an inch. They have been well-trained.

"Defeat them and improve your own fame. Let's go!"

With a short 'Oh!', the Magrado and Treia expeditionary army of 10 000 begin their march.

Their movements are immediately discovered by the Goldonian scouts and it is only a matter of time before both sides clash with each other.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 11 200

Infantry: 2700, Cavalry: 1500, Archers: 800, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 6000

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Roleil

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil

# CHAPTER 99

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑤

### BATTLE OF ROLEIL

---

–Aegir POV–

A small stream flows smoothly in front of us. There are gently sloping hills here and there, but besides that, there is nothing but uninterrupted plains.

We can also see an army wrapped in steel, with many flags waving about.

“As I thought, the enemy was Magrado. I can see their flag.”

“Yeah. But it doesn’t matter now, does it?”

“You’re right. At this point, there’s nothing left to do but fight the enemy.”

The enemy confronts our army from across the stream. The staring contest continues across the stream, where the North Teries river pours into, just slightly south of the plains on the outskirts of Roleil.

Be that as it may, since it hasn’t rained recently, the depth of water in the river is at most up to our thighs and is flowing calmly, and besides it being a bit lower than the surrounding area and having a slightly harder time running on the gravel road, it isn’t an obstacle worth pointing out for both armies. People and horses can easily cross the river, so the only thing separating us in this staring contest is a psychological barrier on this empty plains.

“Leopolt, the enemy didn’t do anything to the river like last time, did they?<sup>1</sup>”

“It’s geographically impossible.”

Fumu, that’s a load off my mind.

“The Magrado army from the visible troops are around 10 000 and Treia’s imperial guards number 5000, for a total of 15 000!”

Celia informs us. She calculated correctly, impressive.

I rub her head on top of her helmet, but Celia remains stern. She doesn't have to be so tense.

"Well, shall we go?"

"Yessir."

On Leopolt's orders, the bow cavalry splits into three large groups while the infantry, spear cavalry and heavy cavalry form into ranks.

"Start advancing forward!"

This isn't a forward charge. The entire army moves at the same speed, closing the distance between the enemy steadily.

"Please don't charge in this time."

"I'm not going to charge in the beginning."

The enemy has also formed impressive ranks and is advancing forward to meet us. If I charge in by myself, I'll be ruined instantly.

"It looks like the enemy is taking up a wide area at the front of the battlefield."

If I had to say it, the enemy is lining up horizontally. The Magrado army and imperial guards are adjacent to each other and increasing their area.

"If they spread out horizontally, it's easy to breakthrough them, but it will be hard to pass them from the side. The enemy is probably confident in their ability to prevent horses from breaking through."

Fumu, that reminds me, the eastern defence force also used some ridiculously long spears. Should I try?

"Tell Luna to lead the first division bow cavalry and confront the imperial guards on the right wing."

The messenger runs off and in no time, 2000 bow cavalry changes course and picks up speed. Luna's squad halts in front of the guards and forms into ranks. The next moment, they shout war cries and start charging.

"First division bow cavalry, start charging."

"The enemy sent their archers to the front."

The archers appear from the enemy's ranks and loose their arrows simultaneously, knocking a few of the cavalry off their horses. In response, the ally bow cavalry also return fire while charging and defeat around the same number of enemies. As expected, if they're sprinting at full speed, their shooting accuracy decreases.

Both armies close the distance to each other, suffering minor damage, and judging it impossible to defeat us using bows, the imperial guards pull the archers back and send out their spear unit using those 6 m long things. When they stand together, it looks like a pincushion and it doesn't look like any cavalry could get by. In addition, there are many bowguns aimed from in between them. But this is where the bow cavalry shines.

"All units stop, fire disruptive shots!"

Luna shouts and the bow cavalry hold their positions and loose their arrows one after the other. It wasn't a controlled simultaneous volley, but one where everybody fires on their own accord, a tactic with a high degree of freedom.

"Do not fear! They are inaccurate when shooting on their horses, they're trying to disorganiz- guhh! "

The enemy spearmen commander got hit in the throat and eye and fell off his horse. Unfortunately, their precision is way higher than that of your archers. Their accuracy when shooting at a standstill is one hundred percent.

The enemy bowguns are firing in a panic, but the distance is too great. It is still within the shooting range of a bow, but the enemy couldn't get the desired results from the smaller and heavier bolts of the bowgun, which don't get carried by the wind. The super long spears the soldiers are holding requires both hands, so they couldn't use shields, causing them to fall over quite amusingly.



“I knew about it before, but they have an amazing loosing speed.”

“Yes, if they shoot freely, they’re more than two times faster than normal bow cavalry.”

“Pipi is even faster!”

The one-sided target practice continues while I rub the underside of Pipi’s chin to praise her. The enemy archers try to support the spearmen with high-angled fire from behind, but because their field of vision is low, their accuracy is quite low.

“Damnit! Spear unit, stand down and have the archers up front to counterattack.”

The enemy formation changes once again. Even though they’re aware of the fact that changing formations in the presence of the enemy is a foolish move, they must have deemed it their only option, not to mention they did it twice.

“Exactly how it went in training.”

The enemy continues to shoot and there is no time to check whether there are 2000 or 1500 bow cavalry remaining.

“Charge!”

While the formation is loosing arrows in a horizontal line, it splits open and a group of 500 soldiers lined up vertically unsheathes their swords and charges forward. The formation changes again, waiting for the exact moment when the spear unit and archer unit combine with each other. The distance is so close that a bolt from a bowgun could reach the other side, and there is absolutely no time to react to an accelerating charge from a cavalry. The horizontal formation was also used to hide the ones galloping in from the back.

Their formation is solid when they line up together with their super long spears, but in a situation where the soldiers get blended together, there is no fear nor readiness. If you get in range of a sword, you can only stand there like an idiot.

“Luna-san, the enemy charged! Have the remaining bow cavalry switch to swords and start charging!”

“Irijina, go.”

“Yeah! Leave it to me!”

Irijina takes 500, half of the spear cavalry, and leads them to the already collapsing right wing... then circles around further right of the group of guards. Although the light-armored spear cavalry are flanking, it is still difficult to break through the defense of the super long spears. Nevertheless, they detour, since there is only meaning if they threaten them with the risk of being surrounded. The enemy soon encroaches on Luna's unit and their formation is disturbed and in chaos.

“Guuh”

“Higijh”

“Don't lose speed, cut them down while breaking through!”

The swords of the bow cavalry are not straight like those of regular soldiers, but curved like a crescent moon. This makes it easier to slice through the enemies when passing by and they won't get stabbed by swords either.

“It might be strange to call them bow cavalry now.”

While thinking such idle thoughts like what new name they should get, the situation changes further.

“The enemy cavalry unit is appearing in the center! Around 2000 are passing through the front and heading to support the right wing.”

“Hooh, as expected, they're playing their hand.”

Celia's pretty voice resounds and Leopolt is speaking in a mocking tone.

From what I can see from here, the Magrado army in the center and left wings are already a completed army. I saw that they didn't have much cooperation with Treia's imperial guards on the right wing, but I guess it was true.

“I would have abandoned them, but if it's an allied army, they probably can't do so.”

With the raise of a hand, the 2000 units in the second division bow cavalry ran at an angle parallel with the enemy. It goes without saying that this chance should be used to defeat the enemy cavalry if possible.

The shooting starts and many enemy cavalry take hits and fall off their horses. But the Magrado army is well trained and wait until the last minute to calmly align themselves with the spear unit.

A large number of arrows rained down on the pursuing second division from the center of their army and about the same number of our troops are defeated.

“Fumu, they’re tough. Have the second division get back. Luna and Irijina should stand down too.”

On Celia’s instructions, a colored flaming arrow is shot in the air. The second division bow cavalry turn around, while Luna’s first division bow cavalry and Irijina’s spear cavalry bypass the enemy and make a large loop around the back of their formation before returning to our position. The bow cavalry can also fight in close combat but if they clash with the enemy cavalry, they don’t have an advantage in the difference between their weapons. There is no need to destroy their advantage by forcing them to fight up close.

“They’ll go back as soon as they withdraw. This speed is their strongest point.”

Leopolt values mobility over heavy equipment. I understood this after observing recently. But I like big and heavy things.<sup>2</sup>

“Luna-san and Irijina-san have returned. The enemy reinforcement cavalry only suffered minor casualties, but the right wing seems to have taken considerable damage.”

At first glance, the enemy will want to rebuild their line of spears to prepare for a second attack on their right wing, but there are fallen soldiers and confused soldiers making a disorganized mess in that area. The commanders are shouting and a line of sorts is formed but it doesn’t look like it can be used aggressively.

“The right wing will just be a decoration for now. Well done, Luna.”

“I’m delighted to receive such undeserved praise.”

I should really do something about the way she speaks later.

“There are changes in the enemy formations. The center is joining up with the left wing!”

I look forward again after I hear Celia’s voice. A faction that wasn’t seen before appeared in front of us.



### **–Third Person POV–**

Treia Magrado Allied Forces Camp

“For it to turn out like this...”

Radgalf, the supreme commander of the expeditionary army, speaks like he’s groaning.

“What terrifying offensive power. To think they could defeat the spear unit with their cavalry, it’s unthinkable.”

Radgalf’s men also nod in amazement. ‘The defensive formation of the spear unit can fend off their cavalry.’ The scene unfolding in front of their eyes easily shatters such common sense.

“I heard that the barbarians in the remote regions can skillfully use bows while riding horses. Were they taken in or were they hired as mercenaries...?”

“It’s fine either way. We’ll dance with them a second time in the same formation. Join up with the left wing and change the formation.”

“Yessir!”

“Understood!”

Flags are waving and the formation changes quickly. The Goldonian side does the same, since the unit that participated in the earlier attack is on their way back to their

positions, they are in a chaotic state for a brief moment. It's already confirmed that there will be no danger from them charging.

"If they went straight for our center right at the start, it might have been a huge mess."

"In that sense, we were saved by Treia, who became their target. If we don't seal that archery skill, it won't even be a contest for us."

"Roughly three times the accuracy and twice the speed, huh? If they have 6000 cavalry, then it feels the same as them having 36 000 archers. We would be ripped to shreds if we take a hit from that."

Radgalf and his men breathe a sigh and laugh together. Unexpected bad luck and good fortune fall on them on the battlefield. All of that is also a part of skill.

"The heavy infantry have all finished deploying on the side! Breakthrough formation completed!"

"What should we do about the Treian army on the right wing?"

"Leave them alone, a disorganized unit will only slow us down. The opponent isn't so easy that we can shoulder them and fight."

The prime minister says something in the back but Radgalf and his men ignore him. This is the battlefield and not some place for a civil official to make his appearance.

"First we'll have them show us their strategy. Then we'll show them how we fight."

Radgalf's subordinates smile fearlessly. Being veterans of battle, they don't feel afraid.

"All units advance! Destroy them!"



**-Aegir POV-**

Goldonia Camp

"A metal... box?"

Celia mumbles unknowingly the correct scene. The heavily armored infantry emerges from the front of the enemy army, holding out their large shields, which are as tall as their bodies. Long spears extend from the gaps between the shields and this formation is the same on all fronts.

There are 8 of those large and wide metal box formations and 1000 cavalry on the left and right. Combined with a ringing gong, the footsteps of their march are completely in sync.

“It seems different than the box formation. It’s slow.”

Based on appearance, the infantry are wearing a heavy full-body armor and holding large shields. They don’t look agile at all.

“We have no choice but to see what happens. Bow cavalry second and third divisions, advance forward.”

If their formation crumbles, the other cavalry and infantry will be finished.

“Charge!”

Luna leads the troops once again and rushes forward. The enemy cavalry on both wings stay still while the bow cavalry approaches the clump in the front and looses their arrows simultaneously, but the large shields block most of it, limiting their efficacy.

“It’s obvious that the front is sturdy. Use high-angle fire, break their ranks from the middle.”

The 4000 bow cavalry gives up on the enemy in front and releases their arrows to rain on the center of the formation. But the enemy doesn’t slow down and continues to march forward.

“They can cover their heads with their shields too. Arrows won’t get through like that.”

Leopolt speaks calmly and Celia starts to panic. Relax a bit more, they haven’t lost yet.

“Kuh! Concentrate your arrows on the enemy in front, aim at them through the gaps

and defeat them! Open them up!”

Obeying Luna’s instructions, everyone focuses their arrows in the front and several people fall. However, the line of soldiers behind them dives in and pushes forward to cover up the holes. Furthermore, bows return volleys from between the shields and shoot down the bow cavalry, who don’t have anything to protect them.

“...gh-!?”

Seeing as how breaking through the front is impossible, Luna detours to the side but doesn’t start attacking.

“The sides are probably as solid as the front.”

“It’s literally a metal box.”

The bow cavalry search for a weakness and gallop around the perimeter, but when they try to rain their arrows on the other metal boxes, they lose soldiers instead. The enemy cavalry starts to move when the bow cavalry circle around to the back. There is an advantage in numbers – 4000 to 2000 – but they can’t fight well just by firing arrows from the outside and after skirmishing randomly, they return to the front once again.

Luna, who escaped the enemy’s fire, looks at me like she’s about to cry. It appears there is no method of attack.

“Leopolt, do you have anything? “

“I do, but not immediately.”

If using trampling cavalry is not a ground-breaking strategy, then there’s nothing left to do but perform a frontal attack.

“Bow cavalry second and third division, circle to the back and rest, everyone else march forward!”

“Chase them as much as you can to the edge of the river.”

It won’t be immediate, but Leopolt seems to have something planned. I’ll rely on him.

“Charge!!”

The bow cavalry are the only ones who stood out recently, but the other cavalry are properly trained too. I'll have them show some results this time.

““““UOooooooooh!!”“““

The infantry shout and dash forward, crashing into the enemy in front. It makes a tremendous metallic clanging, but the wall of shields in front of us doesn't break. To be precise, several people collapse but the hole is quickly filled by the soldiers in the back.

Still, bashing them with swords and spears make a remarkable difference than using arrows and the enemy front is in slight disarray. There are some brave men who took the opportunity to poke their spears in but soldiers rush from the back and tossed them away. Many of them who tried to thrust their spears in got skewered by spears instead.

“How disgraceful...”

“We can't fight unless we do something about those shields...”

Celia mutters frustratingly. Since they stopped the bow cavalry, who make up half our composition, it was clear that we are at a disadvantage.

“The enemy cavalry is moving!”

Have they come to settle the battle after seeing us look disheartened? The enemy cavalry are sandwiching us from the left and right. On one side, Luna and her bow cavalry stopped shooting altogether and brought it to a melee battle but on the other side, they approach the infantry clashing with the box.

“Leopolt, I'm leaving the command to you. Let's go, Celia!”

“Yes!”

One wing of the enemy cavalry contains 1000 troops, while the remaining heavy cavalry as reserve forces number 500. It should be an interesting fight.



“Follow me!”

Hearing Leopolt heave a sigh, Celia leads the escort unit to the front and we charge in. In a battle between cavalry, the two sides close the distance in a flash.

The shouts of the enemy soldiers approaching the flank are replaced by the cheering of myself and the charging heavy cavalry.

The heavy cavalry are powerful but clunky and slow, so when I’m riding Schwartz, I’m always one horse in front of them.

“Let’s rout these enemies swiftly and display Magrado’s power for the world t- gyah!!”

I lop off the head of the noble who is similarly at the head of the army. The battlefield is dangerous, so he should be careful in his second life.

I knock back the following two nobles, including their shields, and grab one of their spears with my left hand.

“Soraal!”

I hurl the spear at an encroaching enemy. The heavy spear pierces a horse and the two behind him get mixed up and stumble out of control. Celia catches up after I slowed down.

“Again by yourself! Don’t fall behind Aegir-sama! Rout them!”

With me leading a formation similar to an arrowhead, we collide with the enemy cavalry, using our momentum to tear through them. The escort unit near me is heavily armed so they’re fighting with an overwhelming advantage. As I thought, when it comes down to a battle between cavalry, our side has the advantage.

“That figure, I have spotted the infamous Lord Hardlett! Let’s fight, let’s fight!”

I block the spear of the middle-aged knight, who thrusts at me after twirling it around, then I turn my own spear with all my might. The spear is forcibly flung out of his hands and dances in midair, then I stab straight through the throat of the knight who closes his eyes in resignation.

In response to the three spears thrust in front of me, I deflect one, split the second in half, grab the third one and swing the soldier I pulled along with the spear into the others, causing all of them to fall off their horses. This is a battle royale, I wonder if Celia is okay.

“Shi-!”

“Gyaa!”

Celia is evading the horses deftly on her horse and slipping her sword in between the gaps of their arm guards, then slicing their wrists off. She is really fighting well. I probably wouldn't be able to match her in terms of swordplay.

“A one-on-one with the infamous Lord Hardlett, ah-!! You cowardly-!”

An arrow struck the yelling man straight in the face. Pipi is really unforgiving. At least I'll be the one who sends his head flying.

“N-no good! They're too strong! Withdraw!!”

“Get back, get back-!!”

The battle continues for awhile, and the enemy starts to withdraw when they lose over half their troops. Luna is also redeeming herself and defeating some enemy cavalry, chasing them around. It looks like we won the cavalry battle for now, but that can't be said for the bigger picture.

“The enemy's box formation has hardly been touched! Our troops are also suffering increasing amounts of casualties.”

We are being cornered much more now than when we first attacked them. Leopolt is the one leading, which means that they're genuinely a tough opponent. Alright, guess I'll go back them up.

“Everyone who is injured or lost their weapons, retreat. The rest follow me!”

“You're going to do it?”

That's right.

I aim for the fellow troops being cornered by roughly 1000 people that make up eight of the so-called steel boxes and charge in from the side. Arrows are constantly being fired but all of them are being repelled.

“Arrows don’t work, but how will they fare against a javelin!?”

It’s something I picked up from an enemy earlier.

“It’s a jousting lance... not a javelin.”

I ignore Celia’s mumblings and launch the javelin with all my strength at the completely shielded flank. The spear wasn’t stopped by the shield... and with a clank, the shield and the soldier behind it got flung back into the formation. As I thought, the power of a javelin is greater than that of an arrow.

“Like I said, that’s just a spear... it’s not something a regular person would throw...”

The hole is immediately filled by another soldier, but I charge in nonetheless, since I’ll be using my own spear to crush them from now on.

“Gyaah!” “Dowaa!” “Nuuah”

Three soldiers holding their shields fly far backwards and I can see the inside of their formation through the large hole that opened up. The large shields that the soldiers used were hiding several lines of soldiers on the front and side perimeters and there are archers and spearmen here and there too. No wonder they could fill the hole so quickly.

It must have been outside their expectations to have three soldiers simultaneously knocked so far back that the ones at the back get mixed up, since they were late to fill the hole with replacement soldiers. This is a good chance.

I take Schwartz and his large black body over there and brush away soldier after soldier with my spear. Celia and her subordinates chase after me and dive towards the hole, making the opening wider.

However, the enemies are desperately sticking their spears out to resist, several of them injuring Schwartz. Although the enemy soldiers don’t have much power behind

their thrusts and Schwartz's wounds aren't too serious, it feels like I can hear him screaming in pain. Schwartz's large body makes for the perfect target.

"Wai-!? Aegir-sama!?"

I jump off Schwartz and land right in the middle of the enemy, building up strength before swinging my spear with all my might. It's a single blow with all my power behind it.

"Hiieh!"

With the sound of metal being crushed, the enemies flew over to Celia, causing her to scream. Good, there are no more enemies still alive within the range of my spear.

"Geeeh!!"

"Did he just send ten people flying!?"

"Impossible..."

"Monster!"

I get more excited as even the enemies start praising me.

"Guuooaah!"

I swing my spear around even more as I let out a beast-like growl, grabbing another spear that an enemy dropped with my other hand and thrusting at enemies left and right using whatever I could get my hands on. I sigh as I think to myself that the sound I made is something that usually comes out when I have the best ejaculations.

"UWaaaah!"

"He's not human!"

"Someone stop himm!!"

The approaching enemies lose their limbs one after the other and the unlucky ones lose their heads. The formation that was once a metal box has completely collapsed,

and it looks more like it has been smashed and bent out of shape rather than just having a hole in it. Even the heavy cavalry are on foot and fighting desperately.

And then finally, there was a large clanking sound. All the large shields on the perimeter are thrown away and the enemy formation crumbles as the soldiers start running away.

“They’ve crumbled! Pulverize them!”

After collapsing, the heavily armored infantry are nothing but slow turtles. The bow cavalry giving chase and the heavy cavalry trying to get back on their horses are taking them out consecutively.

“You did it! You crushed the enemy’s formation!”

Celia seems really delighted, but that is finally one box down. I’m pretty tired myself and the other soldiers around me are resting on each other’s shoulders while staring at the sky and breathing roughly. It will be impossible to defeat the other seven boxes in the same manner.



After leading the heavy cavalry back to headquarters, we didn’t have time to take a sip of water or catch our breath.

“Lord Hardlett, please go out once again.”

“...Why?”

Why do I have to take orders from Leopolt?

“I can make an opening in the opponent’s front. I need to have the power to break-through.”

“Tell me how you can create an opening.”

As expected, I’m tired. If it’s a random reason, then I want to rest for a bit.

“The enemy is being pushed by our squads, almost getting pushed back towards the

river.”

This much is obvious, rather, aren’t we the ones cornering them? Besides, even if we lure them to the river, it’s a shallow and gentle-flowing one. I can’t imagine that being able to cause the enemy to crumble.

“What will happen when we circle around to the enemy’s side after pushing them to the river?”

“The enemy will just change direction to deal with us.”

No matter how thickheaded it is, changing directions isn’t so difficult that makes it a foolish move.

“It seems they’re keeping pace with a gong, but the area around the river isn’t even and the footing is weird. If they go at the same pace, their ranks will be disturbed.”

Leopolt has a serious expression.

“If we put a battering ram there... pardon me, if Lord Hardlett could please charge in and create an opening.”

“Hey... you corrected yourself just now, didn’t you.”

“I pray for your good fortune.”

The enemy army’s seven box formations are lined up and gradually approaching the riverbed. I thought we were just pushing them but was he aiming for this?

“We have successfully pushed them back but it won’t be a decisive blow to them.”

How impressive. I’ll forgive his verbal abuse.



Flaming blue arrows are released from the headquarters all at once. Taking that as a signal, the units that have been engaged in battle up until now retreat, circle to the right and make movements to the side.

“Hmph! You think I’ll let you get around us now? All units, shift to the left, capture the front and push them away!”

The enemy commander shouts and the steel box skillfully changes direction in the blink of an eye. The gong resounds at a faster pace than usual, seemingly hurrying the soldiers.

The Magrado army, who are trying to catch up to their allies by the riverside, cause their ranks to start to slowly but surely crumble. The left side is keeping the same pace as usual but the right side is starting to gradually fall behind.

“What are you doing?! Match our pace!”

The commander shouts angrily but the gap doesn’t close.

“Tch-! Our footing-!”

Right when the order to fix their formation was given, arrows are loosed by the bow cavalry, pouring down on them like rain. And it only went towards the enemies on the right who are lagging behind. They defend with their shields and avoid any major damage, but the shock from taking the arrows cause their march to get further out of sync.

“Recover your rhythm! Stop stepping quickly!”

The pace of the gong slows down, but even if the entire unit changes their movements, they can’t make up the difference in their steps. Finally a crack is made in the wall of steel, and the inside of the box can be seen.

“Stop! Return our ranks to normal...”

I have no intention of allowing that.

Their allies are turning around, but falling into the same situation as everyone else, they collide with each other.

“We’re going too.”

“Yes!”

“Pipi is going too!”

I leave my spear behind and unsheathe the Dual Crater, charging into the enemies on foot. I slice through two of them along with their shields, crush the head of another with my bare hand, and steal his shield. The large shield weighs about 10 kg but I can still hold it with my left hand alone.

I block the incoming spear with the shield, then ram my body against him, snapping his spear and knocking him back. This kind of technique might actually be used in swordplay<sup>3</sup>. I kick away the enemy coming at me from the right and then bash the fallen enemy with the corner of the shield to finish him. This kind of technique probably doesn't exist though.

“Barbarians! Barbarians have come!”

“No, it's an Orc!”

What rude fellows, I'll kill them. The wind sweeps over with the scent of blood as I cut down most of the enemies in one slash to mess up their formation as much as possible. Eventually, the enemy formation crumbles and crumbles until it can no longer function as a box, so our allies start falling back.

“Have we been saved?”

“Let's fix our ranks...”

There is just no need anymore.

An innumerable amount of arrows shower on the heads of the soldiers who lost their protection from the shields, causing many of them to be fall quite comically. I face the enemy commander, who is still desperately trying to calm the others down, and hurl the battered and worn out shield at him, as it soars in the air and hits my target beautifully. That became the final trigger that caused the formation to completely collapse and the soldiers to start fleeing for their lives.

The other formations seem to be slightly influenced by the fact that I was rampaging and as a result, when the disrupted enemies could not rebuild their formations and started crumbling one after the other, they finally started to flee and our victory was all but confirmed.



“Raise the shouts of victory!”

“““Uoooooh-!!”“““

“Oh-, kyaa—-!!”

I couldn't suppress my pent up feelings and just stuck my fingers deep into Celia's genitals. Sorry, but I'll be really affectionate with her tonight.

Several squads vigorously pursue the retreating Magrado army. I won't stop them, but the entire unit won't go. My top priority is to protect Roleil after all.

“Well, I'd want to make a triumphant return, but there are still things left to do.”

“Yeah, there's still some remaining.”

Leopolt and I have matching opinions. Luna and Irijina's eyes are sparkling as well.

They look towards the imperial guards that were defeated at the beginning of the battle. They are rushing around in the confusion and heading north, towards Roleil.

“Even though we're exhausted, us bow cavalry still have enough to go on.”

The outcome has already been decided. There are plenty of arrows when we return to town too, so we don't have to be frugal.

“You can do as you like with the equipment stolen from the imperial guards.”

The eyes of the exhausted soldiers instantly change. Everyone knows that at the very least, the imperial guards have the finest equipment that money can buy.

“Don't hold back... annihilate them!!”

The cavalry and infantry combine and charge in.

The fellow soldiers raise shouts of victory and increase their own morale.

Remnants of a defeated enemy.

It's the same as deciding the victors before the bow cavalry even use their arrows to tear the enemy apart.



### **-Third Person POV-**

Magrado, Treia Expeditionary Army

"Supreme Commander! Please be safe!"

One of the commanders who fell to the ground gave a salute before collapsing. He got shot in his stomach by an arrow and can't walk anymore. There's no one who has the luxury to carry people while moving forward. The man is a capable subordinate from Radgalf's father's generation.

The soldier throws his shield away, removes his steel armor, and lastly even his sword, before running. The enemy contains cavalry, and if they pursue, they'll catch up instantly. None of the remnants of the army are unaware of their own fate.

"..."

Radgalf doesn't say a single word. It would be pointless to waste one's breath on idle chitchat. He has to get back to the ship and return to his home country as soon as possible.

"Supreme Commander, be safe!"

One of the knights turn around and face the pursuing enemies with his sword. He quickly gets shot with a bowgun. He's the person who gave Radgalf a sword as a wedding present.

The words to turn back and fully resist came up his throat but got stuck in his mouth. Radgalf's abundant experience told him that even if he struggled here, the only option would be to get annihilated. He can only bite his lip and run away for now.

It eventually gets quiet behind him, Goldonia stops pursuing and leaves. The retreat went as planned and there were no pursuers. No one would chase them after they

distanced themselves so far from Roleil.

“Gather everyone... we’re all retreating.”

The man’s usual daring voice is now flat. The soldiers are also gathering and wavering unsteadily as if they’re all naked.

“I’ve been beaten... thoroughly... a defeat such as this...”

There are many commanders who are missing from the ones who gathered. Doing a rough count, there aren’t even 3 000 of the 10 000 soldiers left.

He didn’t fight cowardly at all. He fought them straight up and to the death and was defeated. But Radgalf’s heart is still unsettled. Subordinates that he’s known for many years, knights that he’s looked after since they were kids – many of them have fallen on the ground here.

He draws the sword that he held on to until the end and raises it in the air.

“Oh God of war, be thy witness! I will definitely have a rematch with him and defeat him! I swear this on my life!!”

His sunburned face looked fearful to his subordinates and they started crying tears they’ve been holding back.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 9400

Infantry: 2000, Cavalry: 1300, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5200

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Roleil

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed

# CHAPTER 100

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑥

### FALL

---

–Aegir POV–

Two nights after the battle, the soldiers and I are resting soundly in Roleil. The only prominent enemy left is in the fortress. There's pretty much no risk of them coming out at this point in time, and as long as we dispatch enough scouts, we can rest easily.

"How does your back feel?"

"Aah, it feels nice."

"Is it really alright if I step on it?"

"Yeah, someone of your size and weight is perfect for my hips."

"Chief, please lift your legs a little. I'm putting the scented oil on."

"It feels slightly cold... but it feels good."

"Pipi will massage as well!"

"Hey, don't mess with the face."

Celia, Irijina, Luna and Pipi massage me as I lie face down on my stomach. It's still morning, but I really pushed myself on the battlefield, so my body deserves a reward. Of course, the girls and I, as well as Pipi, are all naked.

"How is Schwartz doing?"

He got two or three wounds on the battlefield. Although they weren't too deep, spear wounds aren't shallow either.

“Well... when I went to check on his condition earlier, he was mating with the horse beside him.”

What a guy.

“There were two exhausted female horses next to him and he was on his third one.”

“What an atrociously perverted horse. To mate with three horses at once, it might be better to castrate him.”

“”“ ”“”  
.....

Why is everyone looking at me?

“Oh yeah, isn’t there a council meeting today?”

“Yes, Leopolt... -san will be participating.”

It seems Celia is still reluctant to address Leopolt with -san.

“Well, if it’s him, things should go smoothly.”

Things like the policies of occupying the city, and acknowledging the person responsible for managing the city are all too annoying. He would be reasonable yet merciless when deciding these things.

“I’m going out for a bit today. I’ll be fine by myself so all of you should stay and rest your bodies.”

The girls did their best on the battlefield as well. They need plenty of time to relax.

“Muu...”

Not just Celia, but everyone is making an unsatisfied face.

“Don’t worry, I’ll be sure to make you feel good.”

I stand up with all the scented oil still smeared on my body and stick my erect cock in front of the girls.

“The one who wants it first has to beg for it.”

Celia rolls over on her back and raises both her legs, while Irijina lies on her stomach and spreads her buttcheeks apart so that both her genitals and asshole are exposed. Luna’s strategy is somewhat different as she uses one of the pillars on the side of the bed to rub her crotch while begging for my cock.

Everyone is doing well, but I’ll have to start with Irijina’s large and plump ass first. Pipi is also spreading her hairless genitals but she’s still too immature.

“Here I go... fuhn!”

“It’s hereee!! It’s too thicckkk”

“Uuu~”

“Aau”

Irijina screams and the remaining two are unhappy. So as not to keep them waiting, I slip my fingers in both of their holes and stir them up.

“Pipi, get on top of Irijina and turn your ass towards my face.”

“Aye!”<sup>1</sup>

Her hole is too undeveloped for me to slam my meat rod in so I’ll at least let her remember the feeling of my tongue.

“The tongue feels all slippery... my crotch is tingling so much!”

A mature woman feels the best, but it isn’t bad once in awhile to taste a young hole.

The morning orgy begins and it eventually gets quiet after the four women moan in pleasure.



“Fuuu, my hips feel lighter.”

After two hours of swinging my hips, I empty all the juices from my balls, leave the four collapsed women on the bed and leave for the town. On the way, I went to check on Schwartz’s condition, but he fell asleep. Resting after one shot? What a privilege. I check on his wound and see that it is already starting to heal.

“You’re fine, aren’t you.”

I slap his wound lightly and leave. I hear the sounds of a sex-obsessed horse rampaging behind me.

The place I am heading to is the Little Bird Pavilion... the home of Maria’s parents. Maria has probably heard about the war and knowing how kind she is, she will undoubtedly worry about her parents. I’m sure the flames of war didn’t burn it, but I have to check its well-being just in case.

“Pardon the intrusion.”

When I open the door of the nostalgic entrance and walk inside, I see Maria standing at the counter.

“What the...!?”

“I would say welcome... but you don’t look like a customer.”

If I look carefully, it seems Maria has gotten considerably older, and her voice is dignified. That surprised me, I thought that she came back all of a sudden.

“It’s unfortunate, but are you not getting much business?”

“Of course not! Travelers and peddlers both don’t come to an occupied city, so there have been zero customers!”

Naturally. This middle-aged woman sitting on the chair by the entrance doesn’t have anything else to do. The employees also look bored and are drinking tea and chatting with each other.



“The war will be over soon. Just a little more patience.”

“Haah? What do you kn-... wait, you must be-! “

“The ones who entered this town is my army.”

The woman and the others around her perk up. I get a little cautious, but they don't look like they're coming to beat me up. Nonetheless, they have clearly gotten stiff and are rather wary of me.

“I didn't come to make trouble or anything. But surely, you are Maria's mother?”

Her face is exactly the same so I didn't really have to ask, but I just wanted to be sure.

“Yeah, that's right, and what are you to my daughter?”

“You haven't heard from your daughter? I've been looking after her.”

The woman is stunned.

“Then, you're Aegir!?... No, Aegir-sama!?”

“Let's talk in a private room, please guide me.”



In one room of the inn, alcohol is placed on the table at my request as we face each other.

“That girl... she's having a hard time right now, isn't she.”

“She isn't being treated poorly. Maria is my woman, so I won't do anything trivial to her. “

I have absolutely no intention to send her to an enemy country or anything.

“I can believe you, right? What is that girl doing right now?”

“She's living without constraints in the Capital of Goldonia.”

“As a lover?”

“Yes, I love Maria and intend to take care of her properly.”

“You said it upfront, eh? Well, I’m relieved that although she’s your lover, it seems she’s being treated very kindly. Since my husband died, I’ve been raising her as my only daughter quite desperately after all... I’ve been worried to death not knowing whether something terrible happened to her.”

The woman’s legs give out in relief as she loses strength and then she gulps down the alcohol in the cup. I’ll leave the fact that she made a fuss and quarreled during the marriage and the fact that she fell in love with Melissa and became lesbian covered up. If I get her pregnant and make her some grandkids, everything will be fine.

Oh yeah, I haven’t heard the most important part.

“Is it okay if I got your name? “

“Oops, I forgot about that because of my daughter. My name is Pamela, the master of this inn. Please look after my daughter, ‘kay?”

I smile cheerfully and drink together with Pamela, who is now worry-free. She has a candid personality and can drink. It looks like I can enjoy my time drinking with her.



“...So, why are you on top of me?”

“Well, I wonder why that is.”

I push Pamela onto the sofa and steal her lips a little forcefully. I screw my tongue in and spread my saliva into her mouth.

“Puhha- are you sane!? I’m already 45. Plus, you already have Maria-!”

I kiss her once again while revealing her breasts. Pamela looks slightly younger than 45 but her tanned skin and wrinkles that are becoming more pronounced distinguish her as a middle-aged woman at first glance.

“Your breasts are impressive. Unlike Maria’s.”

“That’s exactly right! That girl hasn’t grown at all... or well, that’s not that point now!”

I completely expose her breasts and suck on the bare nipple, rolling it around in my mouth. Her entire body twitches in surprise.

“There are no men in your life now, right? Are you keeping loyal to your husband?”

“No, it’s been several decades since my husband, and there haven’t been any more men. You’re Maria’s lover, aren’t you, so why are you embracing a mother like me?!”

“I felt you were a nice woman after I talked with you and just wanted to sleep with you. That’s all.”

“Maria’s told me before but you really move fas-! Hey now, don’t suck on my nipples!”

“I’ll do my best to make you feel good, so let me embrace you.”

I speak while opening the front of my pants and taking out my cock, which has gotten fairly erect.

“Huggeee!? What is that monster?! You put something like this in Maria...? Of course she’d fall then.”

“If you don’t want it, resist me. “

I remove Pamela’s underwear and place my member against her lower lips. That place has gotten quite dark due to her age but it conversely feels fresh and arouses me.

“Sto-... I said you can’t.”

Pamela pushes her hand up against my shoulder to show resistance. I slowly lower my hips and decide in my mind that I would give up if her hand doesn’t stop resisting.

“I said... you can’t.”

The hand pushing against my shoulder loses strength and moves lower to my chest. It

seems she's given me permission.

"Here I go."

"You can't..."

I push against her tight hole with my dick and spread her open as I penetrate her. Pamela's eyes spread wide open from the shock, but eventually wraps her hands around my head and rubs them around while hugging me.

"Look, it slipped right in."

"Aaah... I did it. I let my daughter's man fuck me..."

What follows is her resignedly pressing her lips against mine and rocking her hips of her own accord. Her mature hole which hasn't seen a man in decades is tight, but still has a somewhat sticky feeling to make for a wonderful sensation.

"Geez-! Is embracing-! Ahn! Such an old lady-! Fun-?! Nnha!"

"It is, so how is this? "

I thrust and pound her deep.

"Agghu! It feels good but hurts a little, yours is just too big."

"Then, how about this?"

I rub the area around her entrance with the tip of my dick.

"That's goooood! It's unbearably so!"

I swing my hips while sucking on her breasts, and change positions every so often to provide some variance. Eventually, Pamela stops kissing and sticks her tongue out, looking only at the ceiling.

"Are you going to cum already?"

"Yeeeeah, I'm cumming! Aaaaaaaaah, cumminggg!!!"

Pamela's arms and legs wrap around me as I thrust two, three times more while picking her up before finishing her off.

"Aaaaoooooooooh..... ooooooooooh....."

I also release a large amount while the beast-like groaning continues. I thought nothing else would come out today, but I can hear lots of squirting. I guess I'm unexpectedly peerless.



"You want any alcohol?"

"How thoughtful of you."

I partake my alcohol through Pamela's mouth, as she lies sideways on the bed. I gently massage her breasts and crotch and she no longer resists or runs away, but smiles shyly.

"That was really incredible... you don't just have a huge dick, you're also skilled. That girl was helpless, right?"

"She was squealing."

"So you're gonna make some grandkids for me by getting Maria pregnant with this huge dick, eh..."

Pamela is continuing to stroke my member which remains plenty erect.

After that, we talked for awhile about some insignificant things regarding Maria and put our clothes back on. Pamela's clothes look neat again, but seeing the enormous amount of seed flowing from her crotch makes me burst out laughing.

"You don't have to mention anything unnecessary to Maria, kay?"

"Haha, you're right."

I give her another kiss before leaving the Little Bird Pavilion. The council should be

ending about now too. Leopolt will come back and tell me lots.



### **-Third Person/Pamela POV-**

“That was amazingggg.”

After the man left the inn, Pamela smiles at the worried employees to reassure them, then returns to her own room and collapses on the bed.

“My crotch is still convulsing... what a man...”

When she was still around her 30’s and after Maria grew up, she had been with several guys due to loneliness, but they were dimensions apart from him.

“I was distracted by his large cock, but the way he handles women is so good, he’s in a class of his own.”

It was the first time in her life that she ever stuck out her tongue and drooled like that.

“Maria found a pretty nice man.”

She felt somewhat jealous of her own daughter.

“Maybe I’ll find a man for myself.”

That reminds her of the man, who is the owner of the miscellaneous goods store in the back and has come to woo her recently. He’s about 50 years old and well-balanced.

“He looks like a lewd man, but he seems nice. Although there’s pretty much nothing I can do with his dick.”

Pamela sits in front of the mirror and starts dolling herself up with makeup for the first time in a long time.



## -Aegir POV-

Evening of the same day

“Is it about time we bring down the Majino fortress?”

Leopolt breaks the ice by speaking in a matter-of-fact tone. I was ignoring most of the boring council and the topic suddenly changed.

“I’d want to bring them down if we could.”

I want to hurry and join up with Erich, bring down the capital and end this war. But that fortress is even incomparably sturdier than a fortress city.

Reconnaissance has been done repeatedly to roughly understand the outside surroundings, but even the back, which is relatively more vulnerable than the front, doesn’t seem like something we can make a dent in with our forces.

“We can trust Erich to breakthrough, but the enemy does have 40 000 after all.”

If it’s a field battle, we might be able to divide an army that is several times larger and fight vigorously, but we can’t do the same when it comes to battle in a fortress. As a result, we just have to ensure the supply lines remain cut off and wait for Erich to bring them down.

“It’s impossible for us to bring down the fortress by directly attacking it. However, it is not impossible to bring down the fortress.”

Leopolt starts explaining.

“It’s really just a trick, huh...?”

“If Lord Radhalde is not stupid, then it will work well. If he doesn’t meet my expectations, then we’ll run and return home.”

“Shall we do as much as we can then?”

If we fail, I want to laze around while tasting Pamela. That mature and developed smell is choking and getting addicting.



Two days later

We line up behind the fortress and set-up our tents. We are at an overwhelming numerical disadvantage in terms of military strength but we know that the enemy won't proactively come out and attack us. Even if they do try and force a field battle, it would be convenient for us in a different way.

"Hurry up, finish the preparations before the sun sets!"

With the engineering corps taking over, the construction continues amongst the loud shouting. Mack carries ten stakes all at once. When I went to check on how he was doing, his sweat comes flying at me. I'm never going there again.

The enemy is probably monitoring us quite carefully so we construct and expand the camp so it could accommodate several tens of thousands of soldiers. Considering the amount of forces we have now, it might be meaningless, but this is part of the plan.

"If things go well, it'll end quickly."

Eventually, the sun starts to set and torches around the tents are lit. Well, it's time to begin the plan.

The infantry and cavalry, who have dismounted from their horses, are relying on the moonlight instead of torches as they head east, disappearing behind the other side of a hill. Then, a large amount of torches, prepared beforehand on the other side of the hill, are taken and the troops march back to camp. Once they reach the camp, they leave their torches there and once again hurry back to the other side of the hill in the darkness of night. This sequence of events was repeated countless times.

"If the enemy sees through this, we'll look like idiots..."

"As long as we kill the scouts, the enemy won't know anything for sure. This enemy of ours in the fortress is careful, but those kinds of people are also often cowardly as well."



“Well, if it doesn’t work, you’ll complain to Celia after all.”

The soldiers who went back and forth, excluding the ones who are carrying bows, number around 3000. After they went back and forth 6 times, we begin our operation.

“Everyone holding a bow, move to the front! Shower the fortress with your flaming arrows!”

Approximately 6000 bows loose their arrows all at once and lit up the night sky beautifully.



### **-Third Person POV-**

Inside the Majino Fortress

“Count Majino! Urgent report!”

Immediately after the sunset, the soldier who was monitoring the south side comes running.

“It looks like a large reinforcement army just arrived in the south, the place where Goldonia’s separate entity has deployed its forces!”

Everyone in the command room starts groaning.

“Impossible! To have such a large number come from the forest is already unbelievable enough, but to have further reinforcements?”

“We have no information on a separate force such as that!”

They don’t have any information to confirm it, but they can’t outright deny it either. Since the destruction of the eastern defence forces, the eastern area hasn’t been guarded, so if the Goldonian forces are there, they should be able to move freely. The messengers coming from their country are also being intercepted so they’ve been getting outdated information in a roundabout way, which obviously couldn’t be accurate.

“In any case, please come to the watchtower!”

The commanders grumble as they climb the watchtower.

“Oooh... this is...”

“What is this?!”

What they could see are torchlights that continue on forever without any interruption coming from the southeast hill and moving all the way to the enemy camp.

“A number of this magnitude; in the worst case there are ten thousand of them.”

“So 80 000 in the front and 20 000 at the back...?”

If this was the reinforcements for the forces in front, they still had a move to make, but in the first place, there really is nothing to do once they moved around to the back, where you wouldn't think of defending. Rather, it's strange that they haven't been attacked back there yet.

“I wonder if any reinforcements will come...”

“What should we do...”

Their remaining food supplies will last around two weeks more and they're getting uneasy about the number of arrows and oil. The soldiers have not been told the details, but they must have felt the change in mood and their morale has visibly dropped.

“It's too premature to give up.”

Count Majino slowly climbs up the watchtower, accompanied by the sounds of his cane.

“You mustn't believe everything until it has been confirmed. First, we should calm our hearts and remain level-headed-”

But right before the end of his sentence, screams and shouting resounds. From an area close to the fortress, fires are lit and several thousand flaming arrows pour down upon

them all at once.

“Commander, incoming arrows, please go inside!!”

Getting pushed inside the castle from the watchtower, Count Majino’s face turns pale, and it wasn’t only due to the raining arrows.

“No matter how I look at it, there are a few thousand flaming arrows... there’s no way an army of 10 000 has that many archers!”

“As I thought, it must be the several tens of thousands of enemy reinforcement behind them!”

The old general’s words can no longer reach them. It’s the final nail in the coffin.

“The enemy’s main force in front of the fortress is moving as well! It’s an all-out attack!!!”

If the main force of Goldonia is acting as well, that can only mean that they waited for reinforcements to arrive to commence their attack. It isn’t so easy to mobilize an army of 80 000 instantly as soon as the sudden firing of flaming arrows is seen. This is clearly something calculated.

“Count Majino... something like this is-”

“You don’t have to say it. I know.”

The fortress will not hold out. What awaits them is a thorough and complete massacre. The old general could not make the choice to have all the youngsters and soldiers gathered from the people killed.

“Gentlemen! You have all fought well. This happened because of my incompetence and my lack of luck on the battlefield. You gentlemen should hold your heads high.”

Everyone takes a still, upright position at the old general’s words.

“I cannot make the lives of you gentlemen go to waste anymore. I will take all the responsibility for this choice.”

A messenger is called, and while everyone is allowed to talk in that short amount of time, not a single person could make a sound.

“In exchange for the lives of the soldiers in the castle, surrender... to Goldonia. Go!”

The messenger takes the large white flag, made from the bedsheets and rushes out to both the Goldonian armies in the front and back. The old general, his men and all the soldiers did not say a single word.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 9400

Infantry: 2000, Cavalry: 1300, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5200

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Roleil

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint)

# CHAPTER 101

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑦

### THE LIGHT SHINING IN THE CAVE

---

–Aegir POV–

The gates of the surrendered Majino fortress open and the once separated path running north to south gets connected. The central army commanded by Erich marches through the gate in long, uninterrupted, snake-like ranks.

“It’s been awhile... but I guess not enough time has passed for me to say that.”

The troops are lined up, with me standing at the front, to greet the army as they came back.

“This is your achievement. In any case, you did well to successfully make such a large detour and cross the plains like that.”

After we shook hands, I join up with Erich, leave some soldiers for the monitoring of prisoners and management of the fortress and head towards Roleil.... I don’t think they’ll all fit in the town though.

“So do you know anything about the remaining forces near the capital?”

“There should be guards or defence forces, but other than that, there shouldn’t be anything else that really stands out?”

To be precise, there may also be the armies of the feudal lords in the area, but their numbers and skill are nothing to worry about. In fact, we didn’t even flinch when we collided with the alliance army consisting of imperial guards and Magrado forces. At this point in time, they’re definitely holed up in their territories and trembling in their boots.

“...Did they put their entire military force in this fortress?”

“The imperial guards branched off, but we obliterated them. The survivors are of no

significance and you don't have to worry about them."

"I see, you did well without receiving any backup."

"Besides..."

Suddenly, I thought about whether it would be a good idea to talk about Magrado in front of the soldiers, but all my soldiers have seen their flag. It doesn't make much difference now.

"We did battle with those imperial guards, who have allied themselves with the Magrado army. We were barely able to defeat them and there were a considerable amount of sacrifices, so they were quite the elite group."

"Magrado!? They weren't disguised as Treia but actually showed their flag?"

"Yes, the soldiers have all witnessed this too."

"Uuumu..."

Erich pauses his conversation with me and calls for a messenger, then starts reciting the contents for a letter to the capital. I guess this information requires that amount of urgency.

"I expected them to disguise themselves and provide reinforcements from behind, but for them to boldly show their flag clearly shows they oppose Goldonia. This would normally lead to war."

Leopolt whispers behind me. He might not be finished yet. I don't mind when we're in battle, but I want to rest a bit, and taste some women as well.

"You've indulged quite a bit already though... there is still plenty of your seed in my stomach."

Celia rubs her belly as she grumbles. Irijina and Luna also blush. The tower of female bodies composed of Irijina, Luna, Celia and Pipi was wonderful yesterday.

"Sorry, I felt that I had to tell the capital immediately. Well, the soldiers will be resting in Roleil for now, but the advance on the capital afterwards... you're also coming,

right?”

“I’ll be accompanying you.”

With the fall of the capital, the war with Treia will likely be over. It would be boring just to sleep and wait in Roleil, and more than anything, being invited to accompany him is a reward in itself. After we march into the capital, the mansions of the nobles and large merchants will be the targets of our plundering after all. It means that we have gained the right to pick the fruits of our labor.

“I’m sure you understand, but in regards to the citizens...”

“The confiscation of assets will be restricted to those of noble class and the merchants with crests, I understand.”

“Umu, your army has a very distinct leadership structure unthinkable in your average private army. I guess I don’t have to worry, huh?”

If you allow farmers and other strangers, who are typically seen in a feudal lord’s army, to march into town, they would usually make a scene by raping and murdering. At the very least, my army has the decency to obey orders, and strict punishment will be given to those who break the rules.

“I won’t say that it’s completely decided, but the enemy has opened the gates for us, didn’t they. After a few days of rest, we’ll head to the capital... there are people I have to talk to.”

Erich’s glance shifts somewhere else. That is where the fortress commander, Count Majino, is drooping his shoulders on top of a horse while surrounded by soldiers.



1 week later, Capital Trisnia

“Fireee!!”

Accompanying the shouts of the commanders are several dozen large rocks that were launched in the air, causing many to scream at their landing points. Following that, several large bolts soared through the air.



“Archers, volley fire!”

The sky darkens for a brief moment as a curtain of arrows drapes over the enemy. The archers on top of the city walls are readying their bows but are falling over the walls like rain.

“Most of the enemy archers have been annihilated!”

“Bring out the battering rams. We’ll destroy the gates and perform a frontal assault.”

“Aegir-sama?”

I thought that Erich was telling me to go out for a second there with his order. This is all Leopolt’s fault.

The battering rams advance forward slowly. The turtle-like speed makes them the perfect target, but the defence forces of Trisnia no longer has any spare energy to perform any ambush attacks. The first battering ram reaches the gate and begins to break it down, and eventually the second and third rams also arrive, completely shattering the gate shortly after.

“The first and second divisions will march forward. The third division will standby in the area, the fourth division will standby here as reserve troops.”

“All units charge forward, treat the citizens as you are ordered to!”

A portion of Erich’s troops and my army begin their march. The outcome was decided from the beginning. The defence forces in the capital are roughly 3000 at best, while we are almost at 70 000, excluding the ones we left at the fortress. We possess a bunch of siege weapons as well, so the defense at the capital of Trisnia seemed like toys that couldn’t even take a hit.

“It would have been nice if they just surrendered.”

I try to chat with Erich. In this situation, I can’t imagine Triea being so brave or hungry for battle that they wouldn’t surrender

“It does seem strange. The messenger hasn’t come either so they couldn’t cooperate

well with their defence forces. It looks like they were in chaos before we even started fighting.”

It’s natural to think their soldiers’ morale is low in this situation, but even so, this is too much so. I am thankful that I don’t have any unnecessary casualties though.

“We can’t figure it out just by talking, so I’m going out too.”

“Don’t die in a battle where the victor has already been decided.”

I mount Schwartz, whose wounds have healed, and follow the charging troops accompanied by Celia. Schwartz is somehow not feeling well. It doesn’t seem like it’s due to his injuries, but rather because he’s tired after going crazy with the female horse during his recovery time. It might finally be time to think about castrating him.

We rush into the city and try to soothe the frightened people as we head to the royal castle, but all of a sudden, three Treian soldiers jump out from the alley. Expecting them to fight, I point my spear at them, but they react strangely.

“Please wait! We don’t intend to fight anymore!”

“We surrender. Please don’t kill us...”

“The King’s already escaped so we have no reason to resist.”

The soldiers drop their spears simultaneously and get on their knees. How boring. But what do they mean when they say the king has run away?

“This is just a rumor but... it seems last night the royal family and upper-class nobles went out to the river and got on a ship.”

“Our superior denied it but ever since then, we haven’t received any orders... there’s no mistake about it.”

“They abandoned us and ran away to Magrado! We have no intention to die for such a cold-hearted king!”

“Shouldn’t we inform Lord Radhalde about this?”

Celia's absolutely right.

"Take them to the headquarters."

"But if that's the case, there shouldn't be any enemies who would put up such a fight..."

If the king has escaped, those loyal retainers who are trying so desperately to protect their country are idiots. If I pay close attention, I can hear sounds of plundering and destruction coming from the interior of the city, but none of the sounds of battle, like shouting and clashing of metal. There may not be anymore enemies who are resisting.

"How boring."

"This is good. It's more important that Aegir-sama didn't get injured..."

When I turn around after hearing a 'kyaa!', I find one of my soldiers carrying a woman towards the shadow of a building. I thought I forbid them from raping.

"Hey, stop."

The soldier looks annoyed, but after seeing my face, his face turns pale.

"What are you doing?"

"T-this is..."

The woman is pulled away from the soldier, who was then told to sit. Celia unsheathes her sword and the soldier starts to tremble uncontrollably.

"I thought I told you not to rape, didn't I?"

The woman clearly doesn't seem to like it.

"Y-yes! Uh, this is... my apologies..."

Celia swings her sword.

"Put your head to the ground and beg, with all your might!!"

The soldier prostrates himself and pleads desperately.

“Please forgiv-”

“Not to me, to this woman!!”

“Eh?”

“Eeh?”

“Eeh?”

Celia’s voice overlaps with the soldier’s and the woman’s voice. I don’t think I said anything strange though.

“You wanted to embrace this woman, right? Then beg with all your might!”

The soldier seems confused, but shouts in an excited and hollow voice.

“Pl-please! I want to embrace a beautiful woman like you! I’ll be gentle, so I beg of you to let me do it!”

“Eeeh... a beautiful woman?... Well, if you’re not going to be rough then... it’s not my first time either...”

Seems like he’s got permission.

“Alright, off you go.”

The excited soldier raises his neck up off the ground and instantly picks up the woman, taking her off to the shade to embrace her gently this time. That should be fine.

“.....”

“By the way, why do you have your sword out?”

“...Isn’t it the death penalty if you rape a woman?”

“If you raped someone, then you would be sentenced to death. I don’t mind consensual sex.”

“.....”

Celia’s sighs and cold stares continued until the royal castle fell.



Night

“As expected, none of the royalty are here.”

Erich and I are facing each other from across the table and drinking tea. He’s the supreme commander and has lots to do, so he can’t drink alcohol right now.

“Do you have to be a high-class soldier if you want to become a commander?”

“Yes, the senior statesman we captured has fallen ill so only the minister is left.”

“So it really is... Magrado isn’t it?”

“I can’t think it’s anyone else. There’s no meaning for Stura or Yurest to do this, and they’re the ones actually sending troops.”

“Could they not be going further down the river to the Federation?”

A sneering smile appears on Erich’s face.

“If they were planning on living as ordinary citizens, then that could be possible. Unfortunately, royalty are not that willing to abandon their power so easily. If we consider that they will return to their own land, it can only be Magrado.”

He laughs, telling me that what he just said should be kept secret from the king.

“But it would be troublesome if that’s the case. We can’t chase after them either.”

We don’t have a means to get across the river since we don’t have any ships. Treia is located upstream from the river and although the river is somewhat narrow, it is still several kilometers wide. It isn’t a distance you could just swim across or place a plank over and walk across.

“We can only wait for the decision from the capital regarding that. The King and that Kenneth guy... I mean, the foreign minister, will think of something.”

Erich had a clear look of disgust on his face and his tone reverted back to that of his mercenary days. The foreign minister is the King’s confidant, if I remember correctly. I guess there are all sorts of power struggles within the capital as well.

“In the meantime, we’ll control Treia’s territory. We’ll have to get each of the feudal lords to obey us after all.”

That won’t be a problem either. Once their capital falls, the feudal lords won’t obey the royalty who fled. They’ll come crying in surrender and resignation in a hurry.

“How about inside the city? Unscrupulous looting or killing hasn’t happened, right?”

“Yeah, there are a few who has broken the rules and have been punished, but for the most part, order is being preserved.”

“I see... well that’s one thing done for now.”

Erich leans back in his chair. I would like to let him sleep, but I still have one more concern.

“Did you know about the thing with the execution platform?”

“Ah... I heard it from the ill minister who has fallen asleep.”

Tens of men and women were hung in the plaza in front of the royal palace. They were probably hung before Treia’s senior statesmen fled but I couldn’t understand the meaning behind purposely executing the prisoners, and from their appearances, they’re clearly high-class nobles. It might be something insignificant, but it bothered me so I wanted to investigate.

“It seems like those are the family members of Treia’s prime minister, Marquess Dunois. He invited the army of another nation countless times without the King’s permission and went missing after he lost the battle. Only his family members got sentenced to serve as an example.”

So Magrado’s army was that ‘other nation’. It doesn’t make me feel good that we

struggled so much against them.

“I guess we should take them down and cremate them. It’s not the most important thing... and the prime minister is missing too.”

“It was such a fierce battle, so I might have killed him.”

“It’s fine, there’s no point fussing over it now.”

Erich leaned into his chair a lot more this time. One of his men brings him a blanket. Staying any longer would be pointless.

“Then I’ll be leaving now.”

“Alright, you really did well this time.”

My subordinates are glancing over at me and concerned about something. I’m wearing armor and dressed up nicely, but my body smells like women. I should hurry and get out of here.

Although I left Erich’s tent, I’m still not that sleepy, so I decide to take a walk.

“Taking a walk at this time?”

As usual, Celia is tagging along behind me. It might be fun to enjoy myself outside with her against the wall but somehow I don’t feel in the mood.

“I thought it might be nice to feel the breeze.”

“The night has gotten much cooler. It genuinely feels like it’s autumn already.”

I line Celia up beside me and pat her head. She narrows her eyes delightedly and rocks her head slightly as I do so. I’m thinking that it isn’t so bad to enjoy myself like this once in awhile.



The memory of the scenery left in a corner of my mind interfered with the calm atmosphere. The staircase leading to the basement has been buried with a boulder but there's no mistaking it. The building in front of me, the geographical features, and the rows of trees... nothing seems to have changed for quite some time.

I know there is no need to get involved. But this might be some sort of fate.

"Aegir-sama?"

I ignore Celia's voice and I knock on the door of the building standing in front of me. It looks like an old lodge, but the door opens as soon as I knock.

"...Well if it isn't Goldonia's... what could you want from me?"

"Show me the back."

"We are just a humble inn and there is nothing suspicious..."

If the first thing he says is 'nothing is suspicious', most of the time, they're guilty of something, which is something I should also remember. I ignore the man and enter the building, then look around inside. When I lift up the carpet that was laid unnaturally in the corner of the room, a staircase leading down was revealed.

"You bastard! Enough of this non-!"

I grab the neck of the man who came charging at me with a fist and lift him off his feet.

"Gah... guh... ggh....."

My hand tightens around his trachea and I can hear bone snapping. If I squeeze a little tighter, it would be easy for me to take this man's life.

"Guide me downstairs. If you do so, you don't have to die. Got it?"

The man nods eagerly and once I release him, he starts coughing violently.

"Hurry up."



The man walks along while holding his neck and I follow him down the stairs.

“Aegir-sama...? Where on earth is this?”

“It’s a little bit of a fated place... It isn’t the most pleasant place so you can leave if you want.”

“Of course not, I can’t just let you go by yourself!”

I didn’t want to show Celia if possible, but it would be annoying if she starts questioning me here, so I’ll bring her along.

When we descended the long staircase, the scene I’ve gotten so used to seeing for such a long period appears in front of my eyes. At that time... when I escaped from the basement, I killed the soldiers and the owner, but it wasn’t like I destroyed the facility. The owner has most likely changed, but a guy who wants such an underground facility like this located in the corner of town will probably have a similar way of thinking too.

The children locked in small prison-like rooms, the smell of garbage and the screaming – nothing has changed at all. The screaming coming from the back is probably a girl getting raped or chastised.

“Th-this is-!”

Surprised, Celia clings to me. Then, we hear a voice coming from the end of the narrow corridor.

“Shit! Because of the war, the nobles and merchants are trapped and I’m not getting any customers... if this goes on, the fee for those brats’ meals will put me in the red. Ooh, Barobo what about keeping watch, you... er, are these customers?”

The man, who clearly deals with dirty money, but seems slightly nicer and less fat than the one from back then, looks at us. Unfortunately, we’re not customers.

“Goldonian military. I’m taking over this facility.”

The man, who appears to be the owner, and the people around him make a commotion.

“Go-Goldonia!? What right do you have to do so?!!”

“The child slaves are being treated terribly from what I can see.”

“It-it’s up to the owner to treat the slaves however they please, isn’t it?”

“Would you like to make that same claim with me outside? “

The buying and selling of slaves is legal and there isn’t a problem with that. It might be illegal to kill the slaves you bought, but I’m not too familiar with the law. However, as long as I can see the owner’s face warp in such a way, I’m sure there are heaps of illegal activities. Plus, in the first place...

“Does the occupying army need the right to seize land?”

I purposely smile wickedly. The kids are probably taken as slaves illegally if I investigate anyways, but I’ll save myself the trouble of having to do so.

After the owner looks at his followers, they draw their swords. Fine, it is as I expected.

“There’s only two of them, if we kill them and bury them in a cellar, no one would find out!! Get them!!”

I was waiting for this. Now, we don’t need to have a debate about rights or the law. We can treat them like rebels.

I make a single slash with my Dual Crater at the two men who are running at me. I watch as their upper bodies slowly slide diagonally and fall off, then I pick up the two swords that have fallen to the ground, one in each hand. The Dual Crater is precious to me, so I don’t want to cut filthy things if I can avoid it.

The narrow corridor can’t fit many people side-by-side so the enemy comes at me two at a time.

“Compared to the battlefield, this is so much easier.”

I split open the heads of the men who came charging at me, and lop their heads off. I swing both of my swords in an ‘x’ motion and slice their arms, then kick them aside.

The one who tries to charge in during the opening I created while doing such flashy moves gets his wrists sliced off. Celia doesn't really understand what's going on, but is fighting just because they're my enemies.

"I-I know this guy... the monster of Goldonia, the battle demon Hardlett!!"

"Why thank you."

I bisect the man vertically from the top of his head, but because the sword is dull, it stops at his waist. Only his upper body is split in half and he ended up in a horrible state.

The man, who fell over in a bent-over state and ended up like a new species of monster, was the last soldier. To be precise, the guy, who guided us in the beginning and lost strength in his legs, is around but I still need him.

"So, you're the only one remaining."

The owner smiles stiffly.

"I humbly apologize for all my wrongdoings!! Speaking of Lord Hardlett means... women, and I can offer you as many women as you want! We have an exquisite woman in this room and there are many others in each prison..."

"Is it necessary for you to be alive for me to take those women?"

I don't need this dirty old man. I swing the blood-covered and completely dull sword at his head. I avoid the juices that spray out from the crushed tomato and stand up the man acting as the guide.

"Ten people... instantly..."

What? That was only ten people? This underground facility is having financial troubles too, huh?

I let Celia go call the soldiers and in the meantime, release the children and the women, who have gotten in together with the children, from the prison. As soon as I set them free, the adult women rain kisses on me manically, but the children seem clueless as to what to do. They've been here since they were very young so it's natural for them

not to know much about the outside world. I was like that in the past too.

“From now on, you will decide what will happen to yourselves. Live however you want.”

I recommend joining a mercenary group. Perhaps one of them will develop into a stunning beauty.

The last door that the guide opened is a thick one, and the room behind the door contains rows of painful-looking tools.

“The punishment room?”

“Heh, yeah”

In the middle of the room, there is an exhausted young girl... no, she looks a little more grown up than a young girl. Perhaps she’s around the same age as Celia. I can tell from the seed leaking from her crotch that she was raped violently not too long ago.

“Ah... please don’t be rough... the pain... I don’t like it...”

The crying girl looks at me suddenly and opens her eyes in surprise.

“Y-you’re... don’t tell me...”

But as the girl lays eyes on the person behind me acting as my guide, she covers her face and cries loudly.

“Nooooooo! I don’t want to be hurt anymoreeee!!”

She won’t be willing to talk anymore, so I pick the girl up and move her elsewhere. Her entire body is covered in wounds and she’s dirty, but her face is quite nice. If she was treated gently, her beauty would shine that much more; these idiots will never learn.



“Aegir-sama!”

Celia brings the escort unit with her and enters the basement. Even the tough escort

squad wrinkled their face at the disastrous scenes around them.

“We’ll take custody of the children and bring back to the headquarters in the meantime. Take the injured and sick people to the doctors.”

The escort unit destroys the prisons one by one and takes the children with them. However, there are already some who have stopped breathing.

“...take them up and cremate them.”

I’m not angry because of my own circumstances. I never felt I was particularly unfortunate to begin with, I’m just disgusted.

“Hey, come over here.”

“Noooo! I don’t like pain!”

It’s the voice of the girl from earlier, and it seems that she’s resisting the escort unit as well. She’s completely frightened.

Just when I was thinking of what to do about her, she wobbles unsteadily over in my direction and hugs me. Oh, so she’s fine with me?

“.....”

“Well, I don’t mind, come.”

It can’t be helped so I pick up the girl and head to the surface. She seems to be fine amongst the other kids so I place her on the wagon and send them off to the headquarters. The girl kept staring at me. Did she fall in love at first sight?

Then I descend into the basement once again. I need to clean up some things.

“B-boss... what will happen to me?”

“You haven’t guided me around the whole place yet, right? Let’s start with that.”

Even though I say guide, I’m already taking the lead as we move around underground. Then I make some light conversation with the man.

“That girl just now gave you quite a lot of trouble, huh?”

“Heeh! Absolutely, that bitch.”

“She’s pretty afraid of you, so did you rape her a lot?”

I even show him a smile to give off an impression of joking around.

“Heeh... well, I guess so.”

“Was it good?”

“That girl, her hole was the best! You should definitely try it too, boss... wait, this isn’t even a room.”

In the corner of the underground prison, there is a heavy-looking steel lid.

“You need two people to lift that lid, and if you’re not careful when you open it...”

I lift the lid. A deep hole was uncovered, and it was so dark I couldn’t see the bottom. The rustling sounds inside are probably rats scavenging for decaying flesh, or perhaps corpses that have become zombies.

“This is...” “the place where you throw corpses and weakened prisoners, right?”

It’s being used for the same purpose as it was in the past, isn’t it.

I grab the neck of the man, who turned pale when he saw my face, and drag him.

“B-boss! The promise w-gah!!”

“Promise...?”

“You said if I take you around, you wouldn’t kill me!!”

“Sorry, I forgot about it.”

I throw the man in the hole. He fell quite the distance, but since there are piles of

corpses at the bottom, he shouldn't die. Although his screams don't seem to end. It's annoying, so I gently close the lid.

Well, let's go back now.



The Next Morning

"You went pretty wild, didn't you."

Erich is already mad.

"As a commander... what you did is completely unnecessary – to rampage like that when the hearts of the people are disturbed right after they have been occupied and then to produce casualties is preposterous."

He sighs and collects himself before speaking again.

"As a man, it's a job well done. It's better for you to be like that."

What an unstable guy.

But besides Erich, it seems the capital is pretty unstable too. A few days later, a messenger from the capital gave us orders to head north instead of telling us about the end of the war.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

Subordinate Units: 9600

Infantry: 2100, Cavalry: 1300, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5300

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot)

Current Location: Trisnea

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint)



# CHAPTER 102

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑧

### NORTHERN TURBULENCE

---

–Aegir POV–

“Imperial edict! Viscount Hardlett is appointed as the commander of the army heading north. The central army will divide its forces and direct troops so the north.”

Erich and I are standing amongst the commanders of the central army in a line as the messenger from the capital is proclaiming loudly. For an instant, I felt like saying ‘I want to sleep in my house, so I’m going back’, but it would be twice as annoying later so I didn’t.

“I humbly receive the order.”

I thought there was no need to respond, since the choice to decline wasn’t given in the first place.

The messenger’s speech is still continuing, but since it didn’t concern me, I step back and stroke Celia’s ass. I’ve been anticipating it, but her ass has been feeling soft and fleshy, resembling more like a woman recently. I should fuck her intensely tonight for the first time in a long time.

“It is as you heard from the orders of His Majesty. I will remain here to clean up any surviving rebels and subjugate the local feudal lords. I will give Lord Hardlett and Lord Akse an army corps each.”

The Central army is currently composed of five army corps, with each corps having around 15 000 troops. Two corps remain directly under Erich’s command, one will be dedicated to the Majino fortress and one corps each will be distributed to me and this diligent-looking man.

“Lord Akse, you will standby along the river after you transport the prisoners of war. There’s a risk that Magrado might bring some enemies across the river unless they have them circle around. We can’t leave the headquarters unguarded after all... before

that, I have something I need you to do too.”

It’s not like I don’t understand. Right now, only the guards are left at the Goldonian headquarters, so their strength has fallen considerably. If they were attacked, they would be in quite the predicament.

“Lord Hardlett will head north along with your private army as well. If you are short on supplies, don’t hesitate to say so and we’ll resupply you. “

“Roger that. But why was I designated as the army commander?”

Erich’s head dropped.

“...If His Majesty needs you to lead troops during emergency times, then His Majesty will order you to do so.”

Really? It must have been way in the past, since I don’t really remember.

“Whatever, so...”

Erich looks at the people around him and jerks his head. He’s basically indicating for everyone besides the commanders to go away. I reluctantly remove my finger, which was digging into Celia’s ass.

“...To avoid any chance of a leak, I have a secret order to tell you that I didn’t mention to the messenger.”

I have a bad feeling about this.

“Lord Hardlett, as soon as you move to the north, I want you to enter the Yurest Alliance’s territory. It will be a breaking of the peace, but you don’t need to worry about that at all. Just head all the way to the capital city without hesitation.”

There it is, I knew it would definitely be something annoying.

“We defeat Treia... and now we attack Yurest while Magrado is hostile towards us?”

“It’s because Treia is defeated. And if we defeat Yurest next, there will no longer be any enemies on this side of the river. We won’t need to worry about the nearby

countries any longer.”

‘Moreover’, Erich adds on.

“Yurest is clearly trying to avoid fighting with us. To say it another way, the border zone will also be shorthanded because they want to avoid any sort of confrontation, so as long as we ambush them, we can push our way deep into their territory very quickly.”

An attack that breaks the peace without declaring war? How irresponsible.

“The reason for the war will be sorted out later. And Lord Akse, you will occupy the port city in former Arkland... the area where three different nations possess.”

It seems even Stura has extended their reach there. But this is actually much more refreshing for me.

“It would be preferable if the attack is simultaneously made when Lord Hardlett is invading Yurest. If possible, synchronize your times beforehand.”

The guy called Lord Akse bows to me when he looks over here. He is exactly as he appears – a diligent-looking man.

“Get ready right away!”

For the time being, it looks like sleeping with Nonna and the others back home will have to be postponed for the next while.



“Er, gentlemen of the third division corps...”

I address the 15 000 soldiers of third division corps as their new commander... it looks more like 13 000, the number probably decreased after the fortress battle.

There aren’t any changes to the commander directly leading them or the corps’ staff officer, I don’t feel much of a difference, but it’s best if I appear in front of them at least once. Viscount Akse, if I’m correct, never had this hardship because he was originally the second in command of the central army.

“Aegir-sama, please do it properly so the soldiers don’t look down on you.”

Celia whispers behind me. I can only see the soldiers being afraid of me rather than looking down on me though. When I was thinking of what I should say, Leopolt steps forward and shouts in a loud voice.

“Life or death will depend on luck when you face the enemy in front of you. But if you flee and run contrary to orders, your death is all but guaranteed. Engrave in your heart which is more frightening: the enemy or Lord Hardlett. However, you will be awarded with a suitable prize for your outstanding accomplishments. I am aware of the strength you gentlemen possess. If you display the power you have always shown, the enemy will most certainly be defeated.”

Hey, what are you saying? The soldiers will be completely afraid now... I’m not that scary, you know.

“It’s better for it to be like this in the beginning. They’ll gradually realize that Lord Hardlett isn’t such an evil demon.”

I secretly peek at Erich, who’s talking some nonsense like loyalty and patriotism to the soldiers, who are lined up with their backs straight. I hate how things get strange just from the mention of my name.

After that, the speech from each of the commanders and staff officers ends. They already have an established system of command and order. If a foreign object is placed in the squad that Erich has already created, it would be confusing for them. Thus, besides me becoming the commander, the composition of the army didn’t change, including the captains and commanders.

I am now leading two armies, including my private army, but since I’ve dealt with a similar situation before, it won’t be a problem.

“Well, we’ll head to north tomorrow. So everyone can eat and drink as much as you like tonight.”

Food and alcohol belong to the Central army. So nobody would mind even if you drink until you die. I will take high-class food and alcohol with me and go back too.



There has been so much to do that mealtime is pushed until late at night. The two of us – Celia and I – sit at a table and enjoy luxurious meat and alcohol.

“How long has it been since the two of us dined together like this?”

“I wonder.”

By the way, Luna and Pipi are already asleep, and Irijina has joined the soldiers to drink. There will probably be an extra barrel of alcohol that goes empty.

“This meat, it’s soft but it’s still quite rare in the middle.”

“I like it when it’s a little red and blood is dripping though.”

“How fitting of Aegir-sama.”

“What do you mean?”

“That’s a secret.”

Celia gazes at me passionately. We’ll probably have hot sex after we eat. But for now, my stomach is empty.

I cut a large piece off the meat and put it in my mouth. As I thought, it’s really tasty, and not something you can eat often on the battlefield. Maybe it’s because I ate something good, but blood is also rushing to my meat rod and pleasure is coming from my crotch. The crawling tongue is licking my dick all over, which is still dirty from not being washed, as if trying to clean it up.

“What is that slurping sound? It’s almost as if someone’s mouth is...”

Celia takes a peek under the tablecloth. She finds a girl sitting there with my meat rod in her mouth and bobbing her head up and down.

“You ruffian! How long have you been-!!?”

I stop Celia from running to get her sword. My dick is filling the mouth of this girl, but

I remember seeing her face somewhere.

“Celia, no need to get your sword.... I thought I put you under protection with the other kids.”

“Nmmoh... nmmomooh!”

“Talk after you take your mouth off my dick.”

It feels good, but we can't communicate with each other like that.

“Puhaa, that place, it didn't hurt... but there are so many men there and it's scary to stay there. I want to be where Aegir is.”

Let's see, have I ever told this girl my name?

“You little-! Addressing Aegir-sama without honorifics, what are you trying to pull here?!! Guards, why did you let something like this through!?”

Celia yells at the guards standing outside.

“Right! That girl called herself... Lord Hardlett's sex slave and said she was called to look after him at night.”

“You believed that nonsense!? “

“I am terribly sorry! But... someone visits every night so I didn't think it was suspicious!”

“Enough already, don't be mad.”

I silence the ranting Celia and sit her in the corner of the room. She glares at the woman while holding her sword.

“So, what did you really come here for?”

“I want Aegir, -sama to be affectionate with me as your slave.”

That's no different from before.

“That’s why you are-! mgh mgh...”

The girl will get scared if Celia yells at her, so I use my hand to cover Celia’s mouth.

“You don’t remember... do you?”

“Sorry, not at all.”

The girl never had any sort of education so she could only use simple words like an infant, but she still started to talk in bits. In short, she was with me in the same place when I was still in this underground cave, but she was still just a small child. She wasn’t there when I escaped and destroyed the prison, but only watched as I ran off.

“I see, you did well to live until now.”

The children that were there got treated roughly and were in such a harsh environment, most of them died right away. I extended my life by fighting and winning continuously, but none of the people I knew back then are still alive.

“Aegir... -sama” “You can drop the honorifics”

“After Aegir left, a new master came and took a liking to me. So he brought me to a room and embraced me endlessly every night...”

I see, so she became the master’s favorite and was brought into a room. It must have been miserable to be raped every night, but her environment would be better and she would also be fed. If she was accepted, then she could live a long life. That was the case for me as well, but the majority of them lose interest or get broken and are thrown back into prison.

“They said that my lower part is nice, so I’ve been with that man for many years.”

I’m terribly curious about that, but I know not to pounce on her now.

“So why were you in that punishment room?”

When I found her, it didn’t seem like she was her master’s favorite. In fact, it looked like she was gangraped by other men and getting tortured.

“That man sold me off not too long ago... but I made a mistake and was returned.”

“Aah, I get the gist of things.”

She was sold off to a noble and she probably broke an heirloom pot or something. The noble came to her former master to yell and to be refunded the money after returning the goods. What he’s doing is illegal from start to finish so he couldn’t just say no after the noble threatened him. Then, the master tortured the girl in retaliation.

“Then I made it just in the nick of time.”

“Yeah, I’m sure they were about to kill me very soon.”

The girl clings to my arm.

“I have always been thinking of you... ever since that time.”

I don’t really understand that. She was only fine with me and not any of the other soldiers during the time she was saved as well. I know that she was with me during that time, but that place isn’t meant for children to get along, and it’s strange how she could remember by name just from simply watching me escape.

“You don’t remember? The time you won against an adult opponent and the guest was extremely happy...”

“I’ve been in several hundreds of fights... so of course I won’t remember.”

“That night, I was in the same prison as you were, you know? Just on the whim of my previous master.”

Now that she mentions it, I remember. When I went to sleep after the fight, there was a small naked girl that came to cling to me.

“Yeah, and when I was going to sleep with you, your penis was too big and it wouldn’t fit... so Aegir told me that it was fine.”

Something like that may have happened. Back then, I didn’t really have much interest in girls. And she was just a kid...



“But if we left it at that, they would have gotten angry so I tried desperately to put it in my mouth... and you were stroking my hair during that entire time.”

I don't remember that much. I do recall being in a small child's mouth though.

“I've been fucked by hundreds of men so much that I can't remember much of it, but the only time I was happy was during that time, that's why I remember it so well.”

The girl leans against me more.

“Other men do painful things and get rough with me, which I absolutely hate... That's why I want to be with Aegir. I can't do anything besides using this place, but men are delighted when they put it in, so I'm sure it feels good.”

The girl strips every piece of clothing without any hesitation and shows me her bare lower body.

“Moggh! Don't show him something so dirty! Aegir-sama is- moghaa!”

“It's dirty... isn't it. Yeah, it's been used countless times after all. But I'm willing to do anything, you know? I'll endure anything you do to me, so please... won't you keep me?”

I pinch Celia's cheeks so that she doesn't say anything unnecessary and hug the girl.

“I still haven't heard your name.”

“I don't have one... people just called me whatever they wanted. So if possible-” “How's Leah?”

The girl mumbles it to herself several times and then shows me a smile that seemed like it would split her face in half. This smile is the first one since the time she's been saved and it was extremely attractive for someone of her age.

It's short, something even an uneducated girl can remember, easy to say and somewhat cute. It's a nice name, if I do say so myself. It has nothing to do with the flat meat<sup>1</sup>.

“Please embrace me. Please do it so rough that I break, and use me like your toy. Leah

wants to become yours.”

Leah hugs me, and although I have no intention of making her my slave, after she’s said this much, I can’t just not embrace her. I’ll think about what follows after I make her my woman.

I give the pouting Celia a kiss and leave her for Irijina to deal with.

“Don’t be so down. It’ll be fine if you get him to be affectionate with you tomorrow. You can sleep with me tonight!”

“No! Irijina-san, do you know how you sleep? I’ll be strangled to death!”

“Hahaha! It’ll be fine today! I drank tons of alcohol!”

“That’s going to make things unnecessarily worse!”

Yep, it’s nice that she isn’t disheartened. I’ll spoil her thoroughly tomorrow.



“Um, so”

Leah gets on the bed, puts both hands in front of her on the bed and lowers her head.

“My body is crude, but please relish it however you wish.”

She has helped me remember already so I pay no attention to whatever she says and steal her lips.

“Well, are you going to service me?”

I lower my pants and reveal my meat rod.

“It’s big, as I thought... it was amazing back then, but it’s not even comparable now.”

Leah crawls her tongue slowly up my shaft, starting from the root and gets it wet with her saliva. Using her tongue, she can lick the entire thing, but she can’t take it in deep.

“Can you put it deeper inside?”

“I’m sorry, it’s too big and anymore than that and my teeth will scrape against it... but if I remove my teeth then-”

Don’t talk about something painful, you’re going to make me go limp.

“It’s fine if it touches. I probably wouldn’t even feel your teeth.”

I hold Leah’s head and slowly push my way into her throat. Part way through, her teeth scrape against me, but that is only a portion of the pleasure.

“That’s good, you’re skilled.”

Leah continues to service me even after I remove my hand from her head, and she releases my rod when she finally found it hard to breathe.

“Gaahhoo! Gohhho! Gehho!”

“You did your best. Thanks.”

I pet her head and she turns red. That is much more refreshing to me than having her take my entire length in her throat while naked.

Then it finally came time for me to taste what her hole feels like.

“Please, go ahead...”

I go in between her legs and rest my dick on her stomach, teasing Leah’s genitals. Leah is slightly shorter than Celia, so the size of their bodies is a little different. Moreover, contrasting with Celia’s toned, muscular body, Leah is softer and her skin is abnormally white from being underground. Finally, her entire body is covered in wounds and scars, but fortunately, those will heal with time.

“Those guys really don’t know how to treat women.”

I gently massage her breasts and put a finger in her genitals.

“Is it already wet?”

“If it isn’t wet, it’ll hurt so... naturally”

So it’s just a reaction from her body and not because she’s turned on. I’ll have to thoroughly make her aroused today then.

I push my finger deep into Leah, surprising her. Its outer appearance is slightly darker and the labia is protruding and considerably roughed up, but the inside is not loose at all, instead it’s strangely tight. The entrance is especially squeezing tight and when I go deeper, there are closely packed folds. The part around that area is undulating and rubbing against my finger.

“If I put my meat rod in here, it’ll be unbelievable, I bet.”

“Whenever you’re ready.”

Leah smiles cheerfully. There’s no way that smile is an act.

“Then I’ll be imposing on you.”

The anticipation of the exquisite hole made my dick even harder as I rub it several times against her entrance before penetrating her.

“Nnh!!”

“It’s tight.”

As I thought, the entrance is narrow. I put in some more strength and my cock slips further into Leah as she throws her head back.

“Kaahaa, it’s biggg!! This is a first for meee!!”

To make Leah feel good, I push myself in and try to search her deepest parts first. I move slowly so I don’t make her feel any pain, and when my cock finally settles in, I finally reach the end.

“Aaaaaaaaah!!”

“This is... oooh... amazing.”

As soon as I thrust to the back, not only Leah moaned, but so did I. First of all, it's deep; I didn't think that such a small body could fit almost my entire length. Moreover, as soon as I reached the end, the entrance tightens around me so much it hurts and her folds are wriggling. Even though I'm not moving, its entirety is coiling and contracting to stimulate my meat rod. Even though I just penetrated her, I can already feel the semen rising from my balls.

"What a wonderful piece of equipment you have."

"You can thrust however you want, you know? Enjoy yourself to the fullest."

I understood it as soon as I started moving my hips, but she is unable to feel pleasure near her entrance because it's been so roughly rubbed. The skin around her clitoris has been pulled back but she's been stimulated so much that its sensitivity has dulled. But to make up for that, her reaction is intense when I thrust to the very back.

"Wh-what was that? I feel a tingling sensation in the depths of my body... I'm becoming strange."

"Leah, you've never felt turned on when you were being embraced by a man?"

"Sleeping with men has been my job and not something pleasurable, but something is weird."

Liquid started dripping from the place I penetrated her. It isn't urine or female ejaculate, but it's the thick love juice that flows out when a woman starts feeling pleasure.

"Alright, I'll let you cum like this. Grab onto me, kay?"

"Cum? Women can cum??"

I seal her lips with a kiss and shake my hips in a daze. Leah starts convulsing and clings onto me as her limbs are flapping around, finally stretching out and then becomes weakened.

"NNnnnnhh———-!?"

“Uuooooohh!!!”

The folds that have become plastered with juices tangle around my member as I climax simultaneously. Leah's folds undulate as I ejaculate and her entrance squeezes down on me. Her lewd movements stimulate my ejaculation to continue for over five minutes.

“My body is moving on its own... is this what it means to cum?”

Leah is panting as she lies face down on the bed with a large amount of seed flowing back out from her ass. I slip a finger in her hole and cover her from behind with my body as I kiss her back and nape repeatedly.

“That felt really good. I thought it would be over once a man releases his juices.”

She's only experienced horrible intercourse, huh. I turn her face towards me and kiss her.

“This was better than all the guys you had previously, right?”

Leah desperately twists her body and kisses me while she mumbles back.

“Not even comparable. So being embraced by a man feels this good. If so, then I want it every day.”

She reaches her hand to my dick and gently strokes it up and down. The seed remaining on my rod drips down viscously.

“Can I play with your penis? It's the first time I've seen something this big.”

I gently pet the head of the innocent Leah as she fondles my dick.

I don't have any particular emotional attachment to Leah. She treasures the memory of me when she was a child, but it was something that I only just remembered.

However, this kid is pretty now, and the way she's looking up at me while playing around with my dick makes me want to protect her. She'll definitely cry if I let her go.

Let's imagine it for a moment:

Leah getting on top of another man and rocking her body. The man is entranced by her delicate vessel and ejaculates after swinging his hips violently. Leah lets out a high-pitched moan as her stomach receives his seed...

"It makes me sick."

"Eh!? Did you get hurt!? I'll fix it right away, so tell me? Please don't get angry!"

"My bad, just talking to myself. Come over."

I hug Leah, who is sucking my cock.

"I'm sorry... I always get anxious since all the other men have done horrible things to me."

"All the guys around you are all just idiots, huh. I will teach you plenty about men from now on."

Leah looks at me happily.

"Are you going to make me your slave!?"

I don't prefer to keep women as slaves.

"Not a slave. Let's see, as a lover."

Leah hugs me tightly; it can't be helped that I increased the number of lovers again. I'll have to train my dick more so that I can handle more women.

"Heey Aegir. This part over here is still left, see?"

Leah gets on all fours on the bed and spreads open her ass.

"My mouth and vagina have been dominated, but no other men have used this yet."

"What a small ass. It'll split apart, you know?"

"I don't really mind though? If Aegir's penis breaks it then I'll have become yours after

all.”

I press my dick, which has regained its rigidity, against the brave Leah.

Joyous screams and beast-like shouting can be heard resounding late at night.

The next day, I woke up to Celia’s furious shouting when she found out that Leah was happily slathering anal ointment.



My army marches towards the border of the Yurest Alliance over two weeks and then steps into their land without any hesitation. The border security, who couldn’t do anything to our army consisting of over 20 000 soldiers, just ran away without putting up a fight, so we burn down all their crude defensive encampments at the border. We are able to invade deep into their nation, all the way to the outskirts of the capital, with absolutely no resistance since Yurest did not have a prepared army nor made any preparations for war.

At the same time, Lord Akse and his army tramples their way into the port city and its surrounding area on the eastern bank of the river, where three countries possess a part of, without declaring war. Anticipating an attack, Magrado withdrew their army, but the other two nations are caught completely off guard and are one-sidedly demolished, resulting in total destruction and plundering to even companies where government purveyors worked.

The royalty of Treia, who fled to Magrado, and the three nations insisted for a unified sanction aimed at Goldonia’s high-handedness, but it was already too late. Treia’s land is already completely controlled, a serious invasion is already taking place in the Yurest Alliance and they are solely focusing on defense, and Magrado and Stura lose the base on the eastern bank of the river so they can’t take the offensive.

Goldonia, who controls the whole nation of Treia and former Arkland, has gradually created a gap in national strength between the surrounding nations.





### **-Third Person POV-**

Yurest Alliance, Capital city: Barrela

“Goldonia’s mad king, how inhuman!! To invade without declaring war!”

“For our friends to intrude without a shred of hesitation!”

At the central city of the Yurest Alliance, Barrela, the conference between the representatives is in disorder. This nation was originally formed by the area’s powerful families and influential persons, so there is no king or single ruler. With regards to the military, the armies of each representative will gather and a commander will be decided after a conference.

On the other hand, since there is no superiority or inferiority among all the representatives, it takes time to reach a decision if there are dissenting opinions, so no quick actions can be taken. There have been proposals to strengthen the border in response to the recent moves made by Goldonia but due to the objections from the nobles married to Goldonian nobles, the discussions turned into a meaningless debates.

“That’s why I said Goldonia can’t be trusted! Who will take responsibility for this now that this happened!?”

“Ridiculous, isn’t it because you irritated them in the first place!? If my country also declared war against Treia, this kind of thing...”

The chairman, who was supposed to settle this yelling, also has the same rank as the others so he wouldn’t have the authority to convince them.

“They have already stepped into our country... nothing will happen if we just talk about it.”

“But do we even have a way to win against Goldonia if we make them our enemy?”

“Stura and Magrado are our allies. If we work together...”

“You idiot! They are separated by a river. They’re different from us, who are connected by land.”

“Why don’t we sort out this situation first?”

The man is the oldest among the representative nobles and is speaking in a relaxed tone of voice. In the case where every one is of equal class and rank, those who are older are generally more respected.

“How many do they have, roughly?”

“The reports state they have around 20 000.”

“And our gathered allies?”

“Around 30 000.”

The elder smiles and spreads his arms.

“Then are we not still at an advantage? This isn’t something that should make you frown.”

The expressions of the nobles around him relax. That old man didn’t open his mouth again after this, but the effect he had on the others was huge.

“Everything aside, we should defeat the enemy approaching the capital city first. There are no objections regarding this, right?”

““Of course.”“

Everyone listens to the chairman’s motion and order returns to the assembly hall.

“Then we’ll have to decide the commander for these 30 000 troops first.”

“Chairman! I recommend the Savage Bear of the North, General Hartonen.”

“Ooh! If it’s him, the person who defeated the enemy with only a few soldiers in the Arkland war, Goldonia will be a cinch!”

The chairman gets excited, but another representative raises his hand.

“Then the impenetrable General Hyuutia should be suitable!”

“The female general Hyuutia!? She’s a defensive master who can repel any kind of mass army!”

Once again, there is a dicey atmosphere in the assembly hall.

“It will be a defensive battle, that’s why Hyuutia is well-suited!”

“What are you saying?! The only way to drive off the enemy is to defeat them. There’s no one else but Hartonen!”

With so much yelling back and forth, the assembly hall gets noisy again as the chairman holds his head. However, a single person’s voice restrained them.

“Please wait, everyone! We don’t have to narrow it down to one person!”

“What do you mean?”

“Are you going to divide the army and then command them?”

The man who raised his voice declared loudly.

“According to our information, the one leading the enemy is that brave general Lord Hardlett.”

A quiet voice also speaks out.

“But there is no need to worry! He is leading both the royal army of Goldonia and his own private army, but his valor will be reduced by half.”

“Is that... true?”

“Well, it might be difficult for a single person to lead two armies.”

“Conversely, we have one army led by two generals. If the two generals are granted with the same authority and one of them overlooks something, the other one will

compensate. When we combine the strong points of both generals – the offensive Hartonen and the defensive Hyuutia – it should result in the strongest army!”

“Ooh... if the both of them join forces, there is nothing more reliable.”

“It is natural that two generals are better than one!”

Cheers dominate the assembly hall and the chairman also nods with a satisfied look.

And thus, it has been decided that two generals of equal rank will be sent to lead the Yurest Alliance army of 30 000 to defeat Goldonia.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

### Subordinate Units

Private Army: 9800

Infantry: 2200, Cavalry: 1300, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5400

Central Army Third Division: 13 000

Infantry: 10 000, Cavalry: 1000, Archers: 2000

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot), Leah (taking care of my lower half)

Current Location: Yurest Alliance, East of Barrela

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint)

# CHAPTER 103

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑨

### FOREST BATTLE

---

–Aegir POV–

Central Yurest Alliance, Plains Area

“The area around here is already more north than the capital of Goldonia, isn’t it?”

“Yes, that should be the case. The central city of Yurest, Barrela, is surprisingly north after all. Nnmoh.”

“It’s cold, it would have been more comfortable if it was by the river.”

“Then we would have to be wary of Magrado’s reinforcements, who could cross the river. It is very unfortunate for them that the city is located to the north. Nnmmh”

“Uuu, Celia... -sama, please don’t get in my way.”

“This is my job. Nnmoh!”

“I won’t lose when it comes to handling dicks.”

In the morning before we start our march, the two of them are attending me in a tent. Celia and Leah are kneeling at my feet while I’m sitting on a chair, licking my cock from the right and left, but both of them are fighting to see who gets to hold it in their mouth.

“Hey, hey, don’t argue.”

Both of them narrow their eyes when I pat their heads. It seems both of them love to get their heads patted.

“Celia-san should do her best for master in the military. Since I will be the one who takes care of his lower half.”

Leah has started calling me master when other people are present. As expected, I can't let a child like this address me by name without any honorifics in front of my subordinates.

"Wha-!? I look after Aegir-sama in all areas when we're on the battlefield! You should be the one... aah, you tricked me!"

Celia released my dick from her mouth when she spoke up so Leah took the opportunity to quickly snatch it away and put it in her own mouth. The enraged Celia tries to appeal for sex, but I grab her and kiss her. The sensation of our tangling tongues sends more blood to my already engorged cock.

"It expanded. Don't hold back and let it out inside my mouth, 'kay?"

Leah takes my dick all the way in her throat, although she chokes, and vigorously bobs her head up and down. Those are movements that are meant to make a man climax, but it didn't happen this time.

"Lord Hardlett, is it a good time?"

"Hyaaa!!"

Celia stops kissing and jumps out of the way. The entrance to the tent suddenly opens and Leopolt stands there with his usual expressionless face.

"...Does it look like it's a good time?"

Unlike the other subordinates, this guy doesn't care at all.

"I cannot see, so let me rephrase myself. The war council will be held, so please pause what you are doing and come immediately."

".....I'll be right there."

What an absolutely unromantic guy.

"Nnbuh! Nnmoh!"

Leah glances at Leopolt and continues her service without much worry. She doesn't

pay too much attention to the fact that people can see her attending me. If I so desired, she would be fine if we fucked in public too. On the other hand, Celia wipes her mouth and glares at Leopolt with a blushing face.

“That’s enough, Leah. You can take it out of your mouth.”

“Eh? But isn’t master suffering when it’s still so big?”

It is tough to endure and it won’t fit in my pants like this.

“I don’t prefer looking at Lord Hardlett’s lower body, so could you please finish quickly?”

When the thought of Leopolt watching me enters my mind, I immediately go limp. I take Celia with me and the inelegant man follows us.



“Now then, let’s begin the war council.”

While the soldiers are dismantling the camps, the commanders, including the ones in the central army’s third division, gather in the command room.

“Before that... although he’s Lord Hardlett’s subordinate, isn’t it strange that this guy without rank is speaking in this setting?”

One of the commanders of the central army asserts. He’s probably referring to Leopolt, who has the position of deputy commander in my private army, but has been granted nothing from the Goldonian royalty, thus making him nothing more than a regular commoner. The commanders, especially those of high status, cannot acknowledge this guy speaking, much less obeying his orders.

“I am speaking on behalf of Lord Hardlett.”

“Then it could be another person of nobility who speaks.”

How troublesome. Helping Leopolt will also be a cause for offense, and I don’t like conferences as it is, so this fruitless argument is absolutely ridiculous.



I slam my elbow into the table located in the center. I held back, or else it would have been crushed.

“I approved it. Do you need any other requirements besides that?”

The commanders of the central army step back in an instant.

“B-but rank is also important to display the majesty of the royalty.”

The backbone of the central army is the fact that it is comprised of new nobles who have been granted rank. However, accompanying its growth, the army also welcomed a large amount of commanders – younger traditional nobles and experienced knights. Compared to the up-and-coming new nobles, they are more concerned about authority and rank. Aaah, so troublesome.

“Majesty of the royalty...? Well there is something that would emphasize it even better than rank or authority, you know?”

The gazes of the nobles focus on me. If there were some beauties here, I wouldn't mind, but unfortunately there are nothing but men, who are talentless as well.

“We just have to win; whatever we do doesn't matter as long as we win. This guy is necessary for that. If he fails, then I'd be glad to hear your complaints.”

I look over at everyone while resting my elbow on the table. It appears there are no more objections.

“Continue.”

“Yessir, first is the position of the enemy, which is here, according to the scouts.”

Leopolt points at a point slightly east of our target destination, Barrela.

“It's close; we might encounter each other tonight if the both of us head towards there.”

“Then we'll face each other in the forest region. The amount of vegetation is reasonable and it is possible to deploy our army somehow, but our army has a powerful cavalry unit. I'd prefer if the battlefield is the plains, where we can make the

most of their advantage.”

Leopolt glances slightly at the commander of the central army. The powerful unit is the bow cavalry that leads my private army. It is the truth, but at the same time also a slight jab at him. Perhaps there was no need for me to back him up.

“That is ideal, but will the enemy follow accordingly? Besides fighting on enemy territory, we are the ones who are in a hurry to fight.”

“In the case they confine themselves within the forest, our move will be to have the third division corps engage them and continue pushing them out if they have the advantage or retreat and lure them out if at a disadvantage.”

“So you would have us suffer defeat!?”

“Wouldn’t that make us test horses<sup>1</sup>?!”

It seems like it’s my turn to jump in.

“If you overcome them, there is no need to lose to them on purpose. Rather, don’t you think it is an opportunity for merit?”

They are opposing Leopolt, but they aren’t fools. The soldiers and commanders have been trained by Erich so they are a first class unit. It might not be impossible for them to overcome the opponent.

“...I understand. Why don’t we show you our strength.”

Baron Helgen, the Commander of the third division corps, opens his mouth slowly. The other commanders shut their mouths and did not say anything back to their direct superior.

“I’m counting on you. Coordinate the details with Leopolt.”

He is a new noble originating from the Wings of Dawn, so he should understand painfully well how important victory is. The new nobles became nobility after the rebellion of the king after all.

Well, the fighting will be tomorrow. The war council is over, but since the march will

be soon, I missed my chance to embrace Leah. Her anus has healed too, so I wanted to dominate her asshole one more time. If I embrace Celia at the same time, they'll get along with each other more too, but I'll save it for next time.



### **-Third Person POV-**

Yurest Alliance Army, War Council

“We should fight the enemy before they enter the forest!!”

“No, it's better to pull them into the forest and fight! We have an advantage with a familiar forest!”

The war council of the Yurest Alliance army is chaotic. But it's not like many opinions are clashing with each other, rather only two people are speaking. The difference in plans between the two generals of equal rank, Hartonen and Hyuutia, are clearly defined.

“Even if we defeat the enemy in the forest, pursuit will be difficult and we'll allow them to escape. “

“As long as defeat them, this is our land and it will be a successful defense, wouldn't it?!”

“What are you saying? Goldonia is large, so even if we drive them away, they'll only come back with more reinforcements. We will only be able to protect our land if we completely annihilate them.”

“We would lose everything if we are defeated then. Shouldn't we defeat the current enemy first and then harden our defenses in the forest?”

The nearby staff officers look at each other with troubled faces. They couldn't interrupt the debate between the two supreme commanders.

The heated discussion which saw no interruption continues for several hours and a conclusion is finally reached.

“First we will follow General Hyuutia’s opinion, lying in wait near the entrance of the forest and then ambushing the enemy...”

“And then when the enemy starts to flee, we will follow General Hartonen’s suggestion, to thoroughly pursue the enemy on the plains...”

It is a tactic where they purposely wait at the entrance and not deep in the forest to prevent the enemy from scattering and fleeing into the forest and lure the enemy to the plains, which is more suited for pursuit.

“I am convinced... so which one of you generals will be commanding us?”

The staff officers and commanders inquire.

“I will give out orders for the defensive battle.”

General Hyuutia replies.

“Leave the pursuit to me.”

General Hartonen answers in a coarse voice.

“...Then in the case where the enemy performs a counteroffensive?”

““We will play it by ear depending on the situation!!”“

The Yurest Alliance army begins their advance under the direction of both generals.



### **-Third Person/ Helgen POV-**

Northern Yurest Alliance, Lonberque Forest

“We will be the only ones to defeat the enemy! “

The 13 000 troops of the third division of the central army set up just before the forest, separate from the main forces and step into the forest. Behind them, Hardlett’s private army sets up and places the cavalry on standby. If it becomes a disadvantageous

situation, they will retreat to the plains and they will look to cooperate with each other.

“We’ll make that cheeky bastard called Leopolt or whatever speechless!”

But the commanders intend to defeat the enemy by themselves. The opposing side has close to 30 000 troops according to reports but they did not listen to the details in the enemy’s strength and believed they had a sufficient chance to aim for victory even while the Yurest army is gathering many numbers.

“Is the enemy afraid? We might make it all the way to Barrela if we continue like this.”

“Haha, that would be nice.”

In response to their words, a countless number of arrows rained down, stabbing the laughing soldier through the mouth and killing him instantly.

“Enemy attack! Ready your shields!!”

The first volley is the one that killed many soldiers, but if you knew the arrows are coming, it isn’t hard to block them. They had that much training at least.

“Confirm the enemy! Extend both wings, and don’t get surrounded.”

The soldiers crowded in the narrow path in the forest spread out altogether and the archers start firing back. It was discovered quickly that the enemy hid in a row in the forest to ambush them.

“The enemy is over there. Be careful not to get surrounded and hit them from the front.”

Under the direction of the corps commander, Helgen, the chaos in the beginning gets resolved and they begin their counterattack, with the infantry in the front and the archers providing support from behind. Regardless of the ambush, if they collide head-on, Goldonia should be superior in terms of strength. They thought in this way as they chose to bring it to a close-combat fight.

The attacking formation meets with the enemy in a single line, since there are trees in the forest that get in the way, so no complex formations could be arranged in the first place. Even so, the Yurest army’s formation starts to become disordered as soon as

they collided with the opposing army and they begin to retreat in various places.

“Hmph, they’re only capable of this much? In the end, Yurest is nothing more than one of my vassal states.”

One of the commanders curses them. Yurest and Goldonia had connections with each other in the past, but since Yurest has so much remote areas, there are many nobles who have abandoned everything.

“..”

But Helgen’s lips did not relax.

“Strange... I didn’t think there would be this much of a disparity.”

There are many trees obstructing his field of view, but he could clearly see there are areas where the enemy is retreating and areas where they are putting up a fight. Because of that, the horizontal line formation is unevenly arranged.

“What are each of the commanders doing? Going out that far is dangerous.”

“They probably can’t see what is going on beside them because of the trees blocking their view. The areas in which the enemy is retreating has especially thick vegetation...”

After saying that much, Helgen and the staff officer look at each other. They have an abundance of actual battle experience as well. This is a trap no matter how they look at it.

“Everyone pull back! It’s a trap!”

Before Helgen’s voice reached them, the situation changes in an instant. Soldiers lying in ambush appear one after the other between the gaps created by the squads that were being pushed back and the squads that were holding their ground and surround the opposing units that advanced too far out.

“Wh-what the-!?”

“Enemies are all of a sudden-!”

Their advantage turned into an absolute disadvantage in the blink of an eye, and the surrounded units could only panic. The other squads try to head over to provide support but the enemies, who were on the defensive and retreating, instantly became aggressive and all squads lost their strength to spare for the others.

“Commander...!”

“Gather the units spread out on both wings to the center...”

In order to save the surrounded squads, he ordered for both deployed wings to gather their forces. But that also backfired.

“Message from both squads on the wings! Another enemy unit has appeared and they are engaging them!”

In order to prevent the main force from being surrounded, the squads deployed on the left and right are fighting intensely. If they get defeated, the entire army would instantly be surrounded and would undoubtedly get attacked.

“Commander, if this continues, we will be surrounded.”

“From that defense to a counter-attack... then the swift encirclement tactic, what impressive leadership.”

Helgen looks up to the sky for a second. There is already no way he could win now, but it's not like he's finished off. It's annoying, but he will have to follow the plans of that guy, Leopolt, and retreat, since Viscount Hardlett's powerful cavalry unit is waiting as soon as he gets through the forest.

“In any case, it doesn't look like we have any other choice but to retreat.”

Helgen instructs all his troops to retreat.

“Don't show your backs to the enemy while you run! Retreat slowly while putting up resistance!”

Helgen had confidence that his soldiers, who have been properly trained in the central army, should not crumble to an enemy of this caliber. The third division retreats slowly

back the path they came from while being overwhelmed by the enemy.



### **-Aegir POV-**

“Contact from the third division corps: they encountered a powerful enemy in the forest and are battling them, but are in a disadvantageous situation and retreating.”

“That’s how it is.”

“Is that so?”

It was exactly the situation described by Leopolt so he is absolutely unfazed. I am not particularly flustered either.

The infantry is already set up in their ranks in front and their battle preparations are complete. The cavalry will hide behind the infantry in as low of a place as possible, but it is a flat land after all. If they look carefully, they will realize it immediately.

“It shouldn’t matter. The enemy pursuing in vigor should not be able to stop on a dime.”

“It would be nice if that’s the case.”

While I was talking idly with Leopolt and rubbing Celia’s ass, soldiers came running out from the border of the forest like they were overflowing out.

“They finally came. Get ready for battle.”

“Fumu, so they didn’t just flee. The number of troops did not drastically decrease either. I guess the corps commander, Helgen, gets a passing grade.”

If you tell him, he’ll probably get as angry as a raging fire.

Like a tail, the enemy appears attached behind the third division corps, who are maintaining the minimum amount of order while retreating.

“Chief!”



“Not yet, Luna. Not until the enemy completely comes out of the forest.”

The enemy should be able to see our formation as well, but possibly judging that we have fewer numbers, they resume their chase without minding. The space opens up when they exit onto the plains and our fleeing allies get surrounded. The enemy floods out from the forest in order to thicken the encirclement. It's about time.

“Bow cavalry, after firing your volley at full power, begin your charge.”

More than 5000 bow cavalry gallops altogether.

“Heavy and spear cavalry follow me.”

Just like every time, I leave Leopolt in charge of commanding from the rear, brandish my spear and charge forward. A pure black flag is raised alongside the national flag of Goldonia as the wave of cavalry attacks. Even though I've experienced this many times, this moment when we charge is something that excites me. The feeling is as if I'm just about to penetrate a young girl with my dick.

“Rout them!!”

After seeing more cavalry than they expected, the enemy lines up their spearmen in a hurry. However, close to 10 000 arrows in total rain down on top of their heads twice. I brought it with me from Trisnia secretly after all. Erich is probably dumbfounded.

Without even time to put up their shields, the line of spearmen crumbles and the cavalry charges through with me in the lead.

“Move!!”

I pierce through the chest and armor of the commander who is trying to get the line of long spears that was ripped to shreds, then charge towards the center of the enemies while the body is still suspended on my spear. The bow cavalry loose their countless arrows at the enemies who weren't in the path of the charging cavalry.

In the blink of an eye, the archers' defense collapse and regular infantry stand in our way, only equipped with simple spears and swords. We'll have to defeat these guys first before we can rescue the third division corps. Erich will probably get mad if they

get wiped out.

“Schwartz, impregnating mares isn’t the only thing you can do, right? Charge!!”

I charge straight into the enemy accompanied by the escort unit, who are chasing after me in a hurry. I brush away the protruding spears or grab and toss them away, including the soldier holding them, to open the path, swinging my spear at the areas where the soldiers crowded together to knock them away all at once.

There is no point to stop and engage them. As soon as I bring the third division corps back into action, the situation will instantly turn in our favor.

“What is this horse-gguah!”

“Look ou-gha!”

“Gueeh!!”

The reason the stirrups are rattling while I’m charging is because Schwartz is purposely moving as he tramples over the enemies. Schwartz, who is heavier than normal horses, is crushing the soldiers, armor and all, while galloping unfazed. I’m just glad that he can do more than mate.

“What are these guys?!”

“They’re different from all the guys we faced before...”

“A pitch-black flag!? Are they a demon’s army?”

It is next to impossible for infantry without spears or bows to stop dashing cavalry. It was a one-sided slaughter, but it wasn’t much damage to their numbers. In order to wipe them out completely, we need the military strength of the third division corps.

“Form your ranks! If you stop moving, it will be ou-guehhh!!”

The enemy soldiers are trying to put up some sort of resistance by packing their simple spears densely, but I send all of the flying, then thrust my spear through the face of the commander sitting on top of his horse. Schwartz steps on the soldier, who is still breathing and crawling in a strange manner. This guy has absolutely no mercy

towards men.

“Take my special attack! Fire lightning hurricane!!<sup>2</sup>“

“There!”

I receive the special attack of that loud-mouthed knight with my hand and send his head flying to return the favor, as the enemy splits up and I am able to successfully reunite with my allies. After breaking past the enemy’s encirclement, with the escort unit following me, the heavy and spear cavalry catch up one after the other.

“A-allies!”

“We’re saved!!”

In response to their cheers, a loud voice was raised.

“It’s not over yet. It is our turn next, push back the enemy in front of you!”

With a resounding ‘Ooooh’, our allies instantly increase the pressure towards the front. It is still a pincer formation where the enemy is attacking from the front and the side, but the arrival of the reinforcements increased the morale of the soldiers.

Conversely, the enemy soldiers are unsettled after letting us join up together. Leopolt is also starting to attack at the perfect timing. The bow cavalry are repeatedly circling the enemy while firing their arrows and then charging forward.

“Lord Hardlett, I am terribly sorry. I went in too deep.”

Helgen, the corps commander, came running over on his horse.

“It’s fine, since it’s roughly according to plan, and mistakes have more or less been accounted for.”

“The enemy has extremely skilled leadership. Please be careful...”

“Their leading is skillful...? “

Is that so? After I started charging in, the enemy has yet to make a single move that is

satisfactory. Even now they are letting the soldiers remain confused, so I thought that their general was quite incompetent.

“Ever since Lord Hardlett switched to the offensive, the enemy seems to be in disarray.”

“Did their general die from the first volley?”

There have been cases where the person leading will die from the first volley if they’re unlucky. If that happens, the army will collapse instantly.

“It doesn’t appear to be the case though...”

“Retreat! Retreat to the forest!”

“Advance! Beat the cavalry in front of you and try to surround them again!”

In addition, the enemy commanders have been shouting contradicting messages for the past little while. The formation is a mix of defense and offense, and ultimately became an indistinct, meaningless formation. I don’t really understand what’s going on, but this is a chance that won’t come again.

“Lord Helgen, I don’t know what’s happening, but this is undoubtedly an opportunity.”

“Of course. All troops, redeem yourselves in front of Lord Hardlett. All-out attack!”

“Tell all of the private army, it’s an all-out attack. Do it thoroughly!”

The third division corps and my private army begin their attack collectively. A portion of the enemies were able to show off some skilled fighting but were weak and fragile as a whole, as they start to flee towards the forest.

Although the situation looks like things will completely collapse, a general riding a horse gallops around the soldiers, shouts loudly and grants order back to the fleeing troops. It is difficult to deal a devastating blow to an enemy who is retreating in an orderly manner. I thought about shooting them down but they’re slightly far away, and above all...

“Is that... a woman?”

When the helmet was thrown off by the general sluggishly, long beautiful blonde hair flutters in the wind. The appearance of the woman trying desperately to command with her hair stuck to her face is disparagingly beautiful, compared to the savage place that is the battlefield. She is a woman who is more beautiful than cute.

Possibly because of seeing a beauty on the battlefield unexpectedly, my dick, which received care in the morning, is bulging and getting bigger. After seeing most of the troops retreat, the beauty glances over at me before heading into the forest herself. If possible, I don't want to injure that woman.

"Victory! Let's pursue them!!"

Celia shouts and charges out, but I grab her by the collar and lift her up.

"Aau-, what are you doing?! Please lower me!"

"The enemy hasn't lost their composure. If we chase them carelessly, we'll be counter-attacked."

"It's a wise decision. We can't use our cavalry effectively in the forest. If they ambush us, it'll be trouble for us."

Leopolt, who came out of nowhere, is also supporting me. Helgen doesn't seem to have any objections either.

"The sun is setting today too. We'll set up camp in front of the forest... don't forget to set up sentries to be ready for ambushes."

"Aau... it's about time to lower me, please..."

I can't. Along with the punishment for being forward with the reward for the fight, I have to fire my seed into your womb. Because of that woman, my dick is pushing against my armor and it hurts.

While still carrying Celia, I was about to leave, but Leopolt blocks my path.

"Lord Hardlett, did you realize that the movements of the enemy were strange?"

“Aah, Helgen was saying in the beginning that they were superbly commanded but it didn’t seem that way to me.”

Although with that said, it didn’t seem like he lied in order to cover up for his failure either.

“I have something to discuss with you regarding that. Urgently...”

So Celia’s rape will be postponed? My dick is about to burst.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

### Subordinate Units

Private Army: 9500

Infantry: 2100, Cavalry: 1200, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5300

Central Army Third Division: 11 000

Infantry: 8500, Cavalry: 900, Archers: 1600

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot), Leah (Night Companion), Helgen (3rd Division Corps Commander)

Current Location: Yurest Alliance, East of Barrela

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint), Repelled the Yurest Alliance Army

# CHAPTER 104

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑩

### THE TWO NIGHT BATTLES

---

–Aegir POV–

“So, what did you want to say?”

Leopolt wanted to tell me something no matter what, so I gave up on embracing Celia and the two of us sit around a table instead.

“I believe Lord Hardlett also felt that the command of the enemy in the battle just now is strange.”

“It’s true... they didn’t do anything after I began to charge at them.”

The only thing they did as a reaction to me is to move their spear unit in front, but that is common sense so to speak and even if no orders were given from above, the commander at the scene would probably order this himself.

“I’ve thought about them being an incompetent who doesn’t think based on common sense, but if that was the case, the third division corps would have been destroyed in the forest.”

I guess so.

“Rather than it seeming like the enemy wasn’t receiving orders, it looked like they were confused by mismatching orders. Their formation was a mix between offense and defense, and while there were soldiers who wanted to advance forward, there were also soldiers who were retreating... this is different from the reaction if the general died in battle.”

“I also felt that, but in other words, what would that mean?”

“I’m not sure of the details. However, it is certain that the enemy has a fatal problem in their line of command.”



Leopolt's expression remains unchanged while only his tone gets stronger.

"That's where I want to use a tactic to disrupt their command to the highest extent."

Speaking of a tactic that would cause chaos and panic...

"A night attack?"

"Yes."

"This is directly after the battle though? Aren't the soldiers fatigued?"

"The infantry in the private army haven't really taken part in this battle. They probably aren't too fatigued either."

The private army infantry and bow cavalry don't even total 3000. The enemy has close to 30 000, and even though they were technically defeated, since we didn't pursue them their numbers haven't been reduced by that much. Don't tell me that he is trying to shoulder too much responsibility.

"We won't be pressuring them with numbers. If you let me handle it, I will definitely deal a blow to the enemy."

If we let the enemy go back now, we will have to fight them again somewhere down the road. It might be better to let him handle it if he's saying this much.

"A spy has been mixed in with the retreating enemy. The enemy's position can be ascertained even in the forest at night."

"If you have prepared that much, I won't stop you. I will entrust you with all of the infantry and the bow cavalry. Try it."

Leopolt nods and is about to leave quickly, but I call out to stop him.

"Even if you fail, try not to die."

If this guy disappears, my problems will increase.

“And also the enemy commander is a woman... a pretty one. Don’t kill her.”

Leopolt furrows his eyebrows and nods unhappily. That should be fine.



### **-Third Person/ Yurest POV-**

Night, Inside the forest, Yurest Alliance Army Camp

The Yurest soldiers are sleeping like a log. The heated battle in the afternoon drained them of their stamina and energy. If they were victorious, their moods would be up, but defeat doubles their fatigue. The ones who led those soldiers are no exceptions.

“That was... miserable, wasn’t it.”

“...it is the worst result.”

Both of the generals, Hyuutia and Hartonen, slump exhaustedly around the table for war council. After their defeat became definitive, the two who put so much effort into somehow avoiding a total collapse feel way more fatigued than the average soldier, but they are still keeping alert because of the heavy responsibility they carry on their shoulders.

Perhaps due to fatigue, Hartonen loosens his clothing and relaxes, showing off an undignified appearance for a general. Hyuutia also removes the tight clothing covering her neck and her manner of speech is no longer befitting a dignified general, as she uses her original way of speaking.

“For such speed and such destructiveness to exist... we won’t be able to switch command in time.”

“The man doesn’t seem to be any less than the rumors about the brave general Hardlett from Goldonia.”

“Would it be preferable for either one of us to take command of everything? Then, we might be able to respond.”

“At this point in time... the soldiers’ morale is terrible too. If we don’t bring it back up,

we won't be able to fight again."

Hyuutia's voice sounds like a sigh, while Hartonen also rests his elbow on his knee and slumps his shoulders.

"You're right. However the unification of command cannot be decided by us alone."

They aren't competing against each other to take the command for themselves. It was quite obvious that two generals of equal status would be inconvenient in the first place. But it was the council that appointed them and not something they could change on their own.

The two of them have their own feudal lords who they recommended. If the two generals change their standings on the battlefield by themselves, the feudal lords supporting them will not stay silent about it. Putting themselves aside, it would turn into an internal dispute and in the worse case, the soldiers might split themselves up in accordance with their political faction. If that happens, they would have a problem even before going into battle.

The female general slouches over exhaustedly and exposes the valley of her breasts. Her breasts are considered large, so coupled with her beauty, she attracts the gazes of men. More so when on the battlefield, where soldiers are pent up with urges.

"Hey General Hyuutia, do you want to try getting intimate with me so we can heal our fatigue? "

"...You have a wife, don't you?"

"Don't be so strict... I do have some confidence in myself. I'll treat you well so let's regain our spirits."

"I'm fine being strict; I've been like this ever since I was born. If you want to court me, please do so after you have left your wife."

"I'm not trying to marry you, it will be just a one-time thing..."

Hyuutia straightens her back and fixes her clothes tightly. Hartonen sighs again at the clear signs of rejection. It was at that time.

“Enemy attack—-!!”

“It’s a night attack! The enemy’s position is unknown, but roughly from over there!!”

The two of them stand up suddenly and rush out the tent without even wearing any armor while carrying only their swords.

“Impossible! A night attack on enemy territory!?”

“Are they able to perceive our location in this forest even when it’s nighttime!?”

They rush out in a hurry, but flaming arrows are already raining on them from all directions. It appears they are already surrounded on all sides.

The arrows are not packed together densely, but the tents are going up in flames one after the other, and the arrows that fall to the ground are burning the piles of fallen leaves which welcomed the autumn season. In the eyes of the sleeping soldiers, who are fatigued, the scene is undoubtedly something from the depths of hell. Confusion arises before they could get into defensive positions and they run around in a panic, trying to escape.

“Shit, we can’t do anything with the soldiers like this! There shouldn’t be too many of them either.”

As far as Hartonen is concerned, even though they have been surrounded, the number of arrows is small and the number of enemies that come to attack them aren’t many either. If his fellow soldiers just calmed down, they should be able to defeat them.

“Let’s split up and calm the soldiers down for now! If this continues, everyone will scatter!”

The two nod at Hyuutia’s proposal and break up, trying to get a hold of their soldiers.



“You there”

“Yessir! 100 People present!”

“There aren’t that many of them! Retreat to the west first and arrange into formation! Tell the others around you too!”

“Understood!”

The soldier runs and shouts the order, and the other nearby soldiers do the same. But when they head west, another commander stands in their way.

“What are you guys doing?!”

“We were ordered to retreat west and set up formation...”

“How could there be such an order? The enemy doesn’t have many troops. Close the distance and attack so you can break through their encirclement.”

“But...”

“This is an order directly from General Hyuutia! Don’t grumble about something so trivial and hurry up!”

“Understood!”

Hyuutia, understanding that the two contradicting messages led to their defeat in the earlier battle, gave out orders that Hartonen would have given and commanded the soldiers to attack so there wouldn’t be any contrasting instructions. The unfortunate thing is that Hartonen, being capable himself, was thinking in the same manner, giving out defensive orders. Both generals were thinking of the other and chose the tactic they were less comfortable with, ultimately resulting in a clash of instructions.

The Yurest soldiers move every which way and get confused, finally choosing to flee in chaos. Not being able to control them, they could not longer be stopped from fleeing.

“Wait! I won’t forgive you if you retreat! Commanders, hurry and pull your trooguoh!!”

An arrow pierces through Hartonen’s body. He was about to pull out the arrow and attack the person who shot him, but additional arrows pierce him and a final bolt from a bowgun through his throat made him fall back to the ground in a motionless state.

“General Hartonen has been killed!!”

“It’s all over!!”

Hyuutia, becoming the only remaining general, wasn’t concerned about the problem of command, rather the only thing she could do was to ensure the soldiers escaped alive.

In that despairing fight, the arrival of Goldonia’s reinforcements signaled our demise. With the unexpected success of the surprise attack, the extermination battle is inevitable and the swift cavalry are coming.

“Is this the end...?”

Having resolved herself, Hyuutia dismounts from her horse and stands on her own. The destruction of the army is practically obvious and there is nothing more she can do. If the nation was going to fall into ruin then she wanted to send even one more soldier back home.

Three vigorously approaching Goldonia soldiers were cut down without much thought, as she continues to stand and raise her spirit. She gets into a stance with her sword, prepared to let as many soldiers run free before she gets killed herself. It was then that a knight riding a remarkably large horse appeared in front of her.



**-Aegir POV-**

“I just tried to rush in and it’s already over.”

“Yeah, the enemy has collapsed. Next, we would just need people for the extermination battle, so Lord Hardlett didn’t need to come.”

The sleepy cavalry, who are still rubbing their eyes, have much less usefulness, but they shouldn’t have any problems chasing and finishing off escaping enemies. The enemy has already broken down and are only scattering about chaotically.

“I just shot a person who looked like a general earlier.”

“Don’t tell me, was it a woman!?”

I told them not to kill her too, what a waste.

“No, it’s a man.”

“Then that’s fine.”

The cavalry that came along start to hunt the Yurest soldiers one after the other. When I leave this to Irijina and start to think how nice it would be to lick Celia’s crotch, I see a beauty dancing in the light coming from the burning tent.

“That is...”

Swords clash and sparks fly as she turns her body and cuts down a soldier. The one who was killed is my soldier, but the way she fought was beautiful. When the third head gets cut off, the soldiers stop moving at the appearance of an unexpectedly strong enemy. That is fine; killing her is not.

“Bow cavalry, wait. I will finish it.”

I stop the bow cavalry, who looked like they were going to shoot the formidable opponent, and advance forward. I had no intention to surprise attack her so I dismount from Schwartz and try talking to her.

“I’m Hardlett. You are?”

The beauty was surprised for a brief moment before recollecting herself.

“Myla Hyuutia, it’s an honor for the general to duel me himself-!!”

She lowers her body and comes at me with incredible speed. Without even time to counterattack, I block with my spear, but she dashes to the side and launches continuous attacks that made her seem like she was dancing. It was a continuous attack without any delay in between, but when I continue to block, the woman starts to breathe hard.

It’s true her speed is terrifyingly fast but my eyes could accurately grasp her attacks and above all, her attacks were light. I could probably block a hundred attacks and not

get tired.

“What’s wrong! You should attack too!”

“Fumu...”

If I make a single swing horizontally with my spear, the battle would be decided regardless of whether the woman guards or not. But if I do that, she might get killed and she will undoubtedly get wounded. For the sake of my dick, which is already hard beyond belief, I want her to remain unharmed.

“Haah!!”

Deciding that slashing won’t work, Myla aims for the gap in my armor with repeated lightning-speed thrusts. Aah, that really helps me out. I pull my body a half-step back and swing my spear.

With a sharp metallic sound, Myla’s thin sword snaps off at the base of the blade. I approach the dumbfounded woman.

“So this is it... father, mother... I’ll be going before you.”

Myla tosses away her sword and closes her eyes while tilting her head up to the sky. I hug the body of that woman.

“Wh-what are you doing?!!”

“I don’t intend to kill you... why don’t we just talk for a bit?”

“Y-you’re going to rape me, right?! For a member of the Hyuutia household to taste such humiliation, I would rather die-! “

Myla was about to bit her tongue, but I pry open her mouth and stick a finger in there before she is able to. If I am able to embrace such a nice woman, the pain of getting bitten is a small price to pay. I then tighten my grip on her body<sup>1</sup>.

“St-stop... guuh... gaah... I can’t breathe...”

I try not to break her bones when I hugged her tightly, and after Hyuutia struggled and



resisted, she lost consciousness and became limp. The soldiers resume their chase after their obstacle disappeared.

“Well, I guess this means the fight is over.”

“Continue to carry out the extermination battle. Don’t give the enemy any room to hold their ground, crush them thoroughly.”

Leopolt purposely doesn’t touch the woman I’m carrying over my shoulder. Celia also has a resigned face as she takes command of the escort unit and continues the pursuit of the enemy. It looks like there is no need for me to take command anymore. When I lay the unconscious Myla on Schwartz, he turns his head around to sniff her crotch. Would you stop that, this is my woman.



The Next Morning

“Uuun... this place is...”

After a while, Myla slowly opens her eyes. Even though she didn’t get hurt, she really slept a long time. She was probably really fatigued.

“Are you awake?”

“Nnh... you are-! Where is this place!? What happened since then!?”

“This is my tent, inside the Goldonian camp. The Yurest army has been completely destroyed and scattered.”

“...Is that so? So I have been defeated.”

Myla droops her shoulders. After a while of the usual questioning, I learn that the woman was leading the army with another man. She probably found out the fate of her own country too. There wasn’t much that she was not willing to talk about.

“So two generals for one army? Are you guys idiots?”

“I don’t have the words to respond to that...”

Myla hangs her head, which means she is aware of it herself. It's hard when the people above you are stupid.

"That has already been settled. Shall we move on to the next thing?"

"Yes..."

Myla makes a sad face as if she's going to be executed. I lend her my hand and help her stand up.

"Put your hands over here."

"Are we not going outside?"

"No, we'll stay here."

Her hands are on the container with armor in it. It's heavy so it should be quite stable.

"Raise your hips up a little more. Spread your legs open a bit more."

"??? What on earth is this? Am I not going to get executed now?"

I won't do something ridiculous like killing a pretty woman. I will be thrusting another spear.

"Umu, wonderful."

I lower Myla's pants and underwear altogether and rest my cock on her exposed, white ass.

"Eh... what on earth are you doing... eeeeeeeh!!!!!!?"

Myla turns back and shrieks in surprise. What is she screaming about now?

"Wh-what are you doing!? What is that thing!?"

"What? It's my dick, of course."

“There’s no way a dick can be that big! Are you some kind of monster... aahn!”

I put a finger into the genitals of the fussy Myla and stir around inside. Her hole is a pretty pink color and the thin wisps of pubic hair also excites my sexual appetite. Her asshole is contracting slightly and is quite cute.

“You’re a wonderfully beautiful lady. I want you to let me embrace you.”

“Of course I’m going to say no! Are you kidding me!?”

“I’m not joking around. I want to slam this guy... in a beauty like you.”

I place my dick at her entrance and rub it up and down. If she grants me permission, I’ll push it in right away.

“Kuuh! Kill me! I said I was going to bite my tongue if you’re going to rape me!!”

That’s not good. If such a beauty dies, it would be a loss to the entire human race.

“Then how about this? If you become my woman, I’ll improve the treatment of the prisoners.”

She’s a woman who thought about her soldiers to the end and held her ground. This seemed like a good condition to make a deal.

“H-how cowardly... using the lives of the prisoners as shields...”

Even if she doesn’t listen to me, I don’t intend to abuse the prisoners. If she listens to me, I just thought I could add some meat to one of their meals.

“Fine, then go ahead and rape me all you want... after that, I will end my life! I’ll compliment you and obey you, so do your worst!”

That isn’t allowed either. I want to embrace you again and again after this too.

“Then how about this? If you become mine from now on, I’ll advise the king to give special consideration to your household even if Yurest falls into ruin.”

Myla’s body twitches. As a general, she is definitely born from a noble family and as a

noble, preserving the family lineage is way more important than her life.

“R-really?”

“Yeah, it won’t be the same as before, but your household will avoid being extinguished.”

“The name of Hyuutia will... remain.”

Myla goes into thought while standing with her back towards me and remains in the same position with her exposed ass and genitals.

“Will you go back on...”

“No. I’m also a person with standing.”

Although I don’t really have any interest in standing or whatever.

After one minute of silence, Myla turns back to face me.

“I understand... I will... become your woman.”

“I’m grateful. Then I’ll immediately-”

I grab Myla’s twisted waist and adjust the position of my hips.

“Wait! I’m still a vi-!!” “Here I go... there!!”

I slam my hips against her while still grabbing tightly to hers. Today is a continuation from previously, where I stopped just before doing it, so my dick is much harder and bigger and I can’t hold back. When I push with all my strength to penetrate her, I could hear the sound of something ripping.

“Hm? This is...”

“Oooow—!! Even though I’m still a virgin!! You’re so cruel, crueeeellll!!”

So she was a virgin...? Then it was bad of me to stick my dick in without caressing her satisfactorily before. I guess I won’t move for now.

For the next while, Myla sniffs and cries. Then she turns her teary eyes to me.

“You fiend... is it fun to torment a virgin !?”

‘It is fun because you’re cute’, is what I want to say, but she’ll definitely get mad so I won’t. Without replying, I close in for a kiss, grabbing her face when she turns away and sucking on her lips.

“It’s hard for me to endure like this while I’m inside a beautiful woman such as you. Is it alright for me to move?”

“It’s fine... to do as you please. But please don’t finish inside, since I’ll get pregnant.”

“Yeah, I know.”

I shake my hips while standing behind her. Attacking her intensely after she’s just lost her virginity is a little pitiable, but I want to speed up the release of the seed I accumulated. The blood from losing her virginity and the love juices secreted to protect her body makes wet sounds as the sound of my hips hitting against her echoes in the room.

“I-it hurts... please do it a little more gently.”

“Sorry. Your insides are tight...”

“Your dick is just too big. It can’t even compare to what I saw on my brother or father when I was little.”

“But your thing here is quite good, you know? “

I fall on top of her body and cling to her, then when I expose Myla’s chest, large bouncy breasts spill out.

“You have big boobs, a lovely face and a wonderfully tight hole... you’re the best kind of woman.”

I fondle her breasts while rocking my hips and kissing her. But tears are forming in Myla’s eyes.

“Uuuu... endure it Myla, this is for the sake of your household and for the sake of the soldiers.”

Not good, this will become rape then. I have to make her feel good somehow.

“How is this?”

While my dick is still plugged in her, I gyrate my hips and slowly stimulate Myla’s insides.

“Ah... that doesn’t hurt.”

I continue moving in the same way for a while, and add a thrusting motion after she gets used to the other movement.

“Ah! That hurts!”

“Yeah, I know.”

I stop after thrusting a few times and gently rotate my hips again. My left hand gently rubs her breast while my right hand rubs her clit.

I endure the welling sensation of my sperm and when I repeat the alternating movements, Myla’s face starts to relax gradually.

“Have you started to feel good?”

“I just got used to the pain!”

I could tell she’s lying from the way her hole is starting to get dripping wet. My dick is able to move smoothly now too. Her nipples and clitoris are erect, so only a virgin would insist they are still not turned on.

“Aahn... nnhaah! Nnnh!!”

I switch from the gyrating hip movement to the thrusting motion and then stop moving altogether.

“Eh!? Wh-what’s wrong? Are you finished?”

“You want me... to thrust deep?”

“Of course not!”

I continue to keep my hips still while only touching her breasts and clit, then I converse with her further.

“Don’t be so stubborn. You’re a virgin... just like a new recruit. I have a considerable amount of experience so it can’t be helped that you feel good. If you accept it, the both of us can feel even better.”

I kiss her and continue speaking while remaining close enough to touch her nose with mine.

“Just one word... if you just say you feel good, I’ll move harder and pleasure you.”

Myla looks at me with an almost pouting face and mumbles something so softly that I couldn’t quite hear.

“It feels... good. Make me feel better...”

Alright, now it’s consensual.

“Uoooooh!”

“Kyaaaaa!! So rough! It’s intense but it feels good!!”

Almost as if the previous movements were a lie, I slam against her with reckless abandon, accompanied by the sounds of slapping flesh, and swing my hips hard enough to move her back and forth while standing.

I endure the intense movements as my pleasure builds up and then reach my climax soon.

“Here it comes, Myla! I’ll be releasing my seed now!!”

I grab one of Myla’s hands and place it on my balls. After being pent up from stopping just before sex previously, she should be able to feel how much they’re bulging.

“Do it outside! Not inside, I’ll get pregnant!!”

“I know. You’re probably almost there too, so cum!!”

Our voices and the sounds of our intense hip movements are loud enough to be heard from outside, but we pay it no mind as my seed has finally risen up my shaft and explodes out.

“I’m cumming!” “Kyaaa!?”

Following what Myla said, I was going to pull out to release my seed, but at that moment, the container she was holding fell over. To protect her from being pinned under the heavy thing and getting hurt, I rolled her to the side. But because my dick was still connected to her, it got pushed even deeper, digging into her womb.

“Kyaah!! You can’t go so deep!!”

“Guaah, sorry, I’m at my limit!!”

At the last moment, the feeling of my dick scraping against her womb causes me to go over the edge and release my seed like a fountain.

“Uoooh!! OOOoooooooooh.”

The sound of my ejaculation was so frighteningly loud that the both of us could hear it and Myla’s belly swelled accordingly. It appears a whole lot came out.

“Eh?... you’re kidding me? It’s coming out... you’re cumming inside? Noooooooooo, you liar!! Traitor!”

Myla is making a fuss while being pinned down by me, but my ejaculation doesn’t stop. As expected, I don’t have enough reason remaining to pull my cock out while I’m in the middle of climaxing.

“Sorry, it just came out.”

“Don’t ‘it just came’ me! You’re horrible, squirting out so much... I’ll get pregnant...”



After letting out everything out, I separate myself from her body, and try to calm the angry woman somehow.

“Hey, cheer up. That was out of my control.”

“I don’t talk to liars! Uuu... it’s so deep that it won’t come out... it might be too late already.”

It can’t be helped. I’ll convince her through her body.

“Eeeh! Why again?! Enough already...”

“I already came a bunch the first time. The second or third time shouldn’t make a difference.”

“There’s no way-, aaah!! Don’t put it in when it’s still sticky!!”

In the end, I managed to avoid any further problems – she fell during the fifth round, pleading for me to impregnate her with my seed after I kept teasing her over and over.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime.

### Subordinate Units

Private Army: 9400

Infantry: 2000, Cavalry: 1200, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5300

Central Army Third Division: 11 000

Infantry: 8500, Cavalry: 900, Archers: 1600

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot), Leah (Night Companion), Helgen (3rd Division Corps Commander)

Myla (prisoner)

Current Location: Yurest Alliance, East of Barrela

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint), Repelled the Yurest Alliance Army

# CHAPTER 105

## NORTHERN DISTURBANCE ⑪

### WALL OF WATER

---

–Aegir POV–

The morning sun rises. My crotch has become totally light. In the battle last night, my balls felt so heavy that it became an obstacle, but I have released everything now.

“Please excuse my rudeness, Aegir-sama! The interrogation of the prisoner is...”

As Celia enters the tent, she takes two deep breaths to calm her heart. She’s become a grown-up now.

“I expected this to happen, but this is horrible.”

“Doesn’t she look happy?”

“It looks like she’s become unable to understand anything.”

“Hahhih... fuck me... big... thick... pregnant... impregnate...”

Myla is lying face down on the bed with her butt raised. She shouldn’t be conscious but she’s swinging her ass.

“Aegir-sama is matchless beyond common sense so please hold back a little. You don’t have to release so much that puddles are made....”

Fumu, I shot so much into her womb because she really liked it.

“Did she use the medicine?”

“No, it looks like she didn’t.”

Celia shakes her head.

“I guess there will be more children.”

I don't know if it will be that easy, but if it does happen, I'll look after it properly. After all, Myla is already my woman.

When I rub the swaying ass, seed leaked out with a kind of nasty sound in response.

After that, we started our march after I embrace Celia and Leah. There is no longer anything that stands in the way of our destination, the city of Barrela.



One week later, Yurest Alliance Representative City, Barrela, Council

“Then, we'll start the conference to discuss the ceasefire.”

“Ceasefire?”

When I glare at the speaker, the man hunches his back and sits in his chair.

“Didn't you want fair and equal negotiations?”

Helgen, the corps commander, lets out an astounded voice.

“U-ultimately, this is a negotiation for the sake of peace...”

After advancing to Barrela, we started to prepare for a siege battle, but the gates were thrown open and a messenger came running to us. I went along because I regarded their desire to talk things out in a conference as them surrendering. So when I heard the words ‘ceasefire’ after getting to this point, I don't know if he's brave or just plain stupid. Based on what I heard from Myla, it should be the latter.

“We have unanimously decided to sever our ties with Magrado. From here on, we will form an alliance with Goldonia and fight together with them. A request from Magrado to form a united front has been sent to us, but all of that...”

I don't have to finish listening to this foolish reasoning.

“I don't want you to misunderstand. We can take everything you're offering to us by

ourselves. On the contrary, the condition to end this war is for you to offer everything that we want.”

“S-so, what will you guarantee us?”

I reply with an expressionless face.

“Besides your lives and safety, we can’t guarantee anything else.”

If they are going to resist, I don’t mind. Now that the Alliance army has been eliminated, the remaining scattered forces of the various feudal lords outside of Barrela are limited. I just have to systematically burn all of their cities down.

“You tyrant!!”

“How insolent of you after you broke the treaty in the first place!”

“To be precise, if you and your family move to Goldonia, I can guarantee that you will live without worrying about food.”

Leopolt chips in his own two cents. I guess the messenger from the King did say something like that.

The feudal lords get loud and start making a fuss, but one of them raises his hand.

“If I may ask, Lord Hardlett is a Goldonian Viscount... is that right? From the beginning, I have many relatives here in Goldonia. Even now, I have a certain marquess acting as cabinet minister, and may act as our ally.”

Even though he says ‘certain’, I don’t remember the names of any ministers. To begin with, is that certain minister going to help here? That’s why I don’t like negotiations. It’s especially the worst when it comes down to relying on others and using blood relations or personal connections.

“This negotiation is from the king...”

Helgen, who wanted to object, had no more words to say and just keeps quiet. I instruct all the guards of the escort unit and all the closed windows of the conference room swing open.

“Wh-what is...”

“This is...”

Taking the open windows as a signal, a steady sound starts to resound and shake the assembly hall. That sound comes from the footsteps and hooves of the continuously marching soldiers around the hall. It’s a sound that could drown out anybody’s voice, and with one word from me, it wouldn’t take 30 minutes for Barrela to sink in a hellfire.

I move to the back as I watch the representative feudal lords sitting at the roundtable. Then I hit the table with all my might... it dented, sorry.

“An unconditional surrender, yes or no?”

Nobody dared to open their mouths.

And thus the Yurest Alliance surrendered unconditionally and is successfully annexed. Their scheduled disarming and the governing of occupation will be left to the parliamentary official coming from Goldonia and the third division corps while me and my private army will head down south.



Two Weeks Later

“So busy, going south, then going north...”

“It’s inevitable. I heard his Majesty is personally commanding soldiers for this strategy.”

Exactly as Celia says, we are heading towards the city of Altoberg right now, which is a port city in Goldonia that is flourishing as the base for foreign trade with the Federation. The king has left the capital and has already entered the city with his imperial guards.

“It goes without saying that the target of the attack is Magrado.”

Naturally, the Magrado Dukedom is located on the opposite shore of Altoberg. Because it is separated by the river, I can't think of any other reason to gather soldiers at the port city besides the necessity of a landing strategy.

"But I hear that Magrado has a navy. Does our nation have something like that?"

These last several decades, there has been no other nation besides Arkland who has picked fights with other nations, excluding small skirmishes. Magrado, on the other side of the river, maintains a considerable navy for that threat.

On the other hand, Goldonia didn't compete with military strength so didn't maintain a decent navy beyond exterminating robbers. Since foreign trade through the river is prosperous, they possess many boats, but it wouldn't be possible to load and send soldiers on unarmed civilian ships.

"I wouldn't know until it happened but... the King isn't that foolish. I'm sure he has some sort of plan."

"You're right... by the way, this is regarding Leah, who is riding with you."

"What is it?"

I'm conversing with Celia, who's riding beside me on horseback, while Leah rides in front of me.

"Her hips are hovering strangely, aren't they?"

"Well, I guess so."

"She's purposely covering herself with a cloak so her lower body can't be seen, right?"

"Isn't it stylish?"

"Isn't the shaking too excessive from just riding a horse?"

"Is that so?"

"Her face is flushed and she's suppressing her own voice."

“That might be true.”

“...you’re inside, aren’t you?”

“Don’t say it so loud.”

“Nngghh!!!”

Leah bites down on her own finger as she throws her head back. The sound of my ejaculation should blend in with the sounds of marching and shouldn’t be heard by those around us.

“...I’m riding there next.”

“Sure, come.”

“Pipi too!”

The march continues enjoyably.



The King personally comes to greet us after we arrived in Altoberg.

“Lord Hardlett, I was getting tired of waiting! Your accomplishments this time around are definitely unmatched!! I knew you were the greatest warrior, but to think you were this capable of leading troops, I don’t know whether to praise my eyes or not.”

The King runs down his throne, set up temporarily in the mansion of the feudal lord, and grabs my hand.

“There are still enemies remaining so I can’t say anything specific, but I can promise to grant you a larger reward than anybody.”

That really helps. I’ve really used up my war funds so Adolph is probably crawling around right now.

“A landing operation in Magrado... is that the last task?”



The King releases my hand and gazes at the river.

“Umu, Stura is also our enemy and that country has mercenaries as their main force, but they won’t be able to gather mercenaries to fight against our country.”

Mercenaries aren’t idiots either. And the number of eccentric people who would join a side showing such strong signs of defeat can be counted on one hand.

“I have received letters from the Stura government saying they want to remain neutral too. In actuality, the only enemy is Magrado but... they have already been dealt a blow and we have the superior numbers, so once we land on their side, our victory is all but confirmed!”

There are already countless ships moored at the port and the central army soldiers, who have finished suppressing Treia, are boarding one after the other. It was an overwhelming scene.

“I hear the enemy has a powerful navy. Are you going unarmed?”

The King grins broadly and slaps my shoulder.

“Hahaha, I may not be as skilled as you as a general, but I am not that much of a fool. Magrado’s navy is nothing!”

30 large ships are moored at the end of where the King is pointing. With a long, narrow shape, and numerous paddles sticking out from the side, the boats are entirely different from civilian ships. There are also sails, so they can rely on the wind to cruise along. Most of all, there are catapults and ballistae and other such weapons mounted on the decks.

“They’re battleships purchased from the Federation! Once these arrived, there is no longer anything to fear from Magrado’s navy!”

“This is quite...”

I’m a total amateur regarding navy, but they seem strong. If he has these ships, he might be able to rout Magrado’s navy.

“I will be putting these ships in front and using them tomorrow to cross the river too.

I believe the soldiers are tired today, but what do you think about decorating your accomplishments with another shiny award by taking the lead against Magrado?"

After coming this far, I have no reason to refuse the King's request. I was about to give my consent, but someone cuts in.

"Please wait, your Majesty!"

The one who raised his voice is one of the traditional nobles, who is participating as part of the lord's army.

"Viscount Hardlett's army has already been in many battles. In comparison, our army has only been a part of the fortress battle... me and my troops also have a burning desire for an opportunity to perform. I will definitely use that fighting spirit and increase my achievements for you!!"

That reminds me, these guys only attacked the fortress and not the occupied former Arkland territory abandoned by Treia. It's hard to say that the fortress was brought down from a frontal attack, so I wonder if he has something in mind.

"...nuuu, I am also planning to follow the advance-guard after they land and cross the river..."

No matter how many transport ships Goldonia has, they can't carry 50 000 or 60 000 altogether. Considering that the Central Army corps have already boarded, the only space left is a few thousand, and if I'm going to go, I was thinking of having the bow cavalry board with me.

When I was considering whether I need to compete over this, my stomach started to hurt. Oh yeah, the shellfish I got from the village near the sea and along the river smelled weird. I ate it without paying much attention but I might have upset my stomach a little. If I have to depart tomorrow, I'll have to get various things ready and it would be hard to hold in diarrhea.

"Your Majesty, my army has fought enough battles. I believe it is best to concede the position of advance-guard."

It wouldn't really matter if I went first or not. Most soldiers don't want to die, so the only ones who are so eager to cut in line are only the upper class.

The faces of the nobles light up with joy, while the King has a slightly disinterested look.

“I see... then I have nothing to say. So I will leave the advance-guard to you, Count Band, Aurdorien.....”

It’s unavoidable. I can’t just spill out my feelings in front of everyone like Celia would after all.



## The Next Day

Several hundred ships depart altogether for the opposite shore in front of us while we slowly make preparations as the rear-guard. Judging by the current of the river, they are advancing at a slight diagonal direction, so it’s a considerable distance, but it shouldn’t take them more than two hours to reach land.

We have taken a spot on a hill in the city to watch the military operation in fascination.

“It’s my first time watching naval battle. I’m so excited.”

“Same here.”

“Me too!! I’m sure it’ll be very impressive!!”

Celia and Irijina’s eyes are sparkling. By the way, Pipi and Luna are overwhelmed from seeing a river for the first time in their lives and are still in a daze. As expected, I can’t bring Myla out with me so I left her in a room in a private residence I rented. Leah isn’t really interested in war, and only interested in getting spoiled by me, so she isn’t looking at the river.

“Aegir-sama! It’s starting!!”

“Is it about time?”

Magrado’s battleships are coming out from the targeted destination, the opposite shore. It’s somewhat far in the distance so I can’t see clearly, but their ships seem much

smaller than the ones we have, although there are lots of them.

“There are four pieces of cloth... and there are eight on our side.”

“There are 20 soldiers riding on each of them!”

It seems Luna and Pipi can see them very distinctly. What amazing eyesight.

“Our side is firing first.”

Balls of fire are flying consecutively from our ships. They’re probably using catapults to fling burning rocks. Most of them fall into the river, but one ship was hit and goes up in flames for a brief moment before sinking.

As they bring the distance closer, they must have started to fire their ballistae, since the number of enemy ships on fire is increasing. The enemy should also be returning fire, but it doesn’t look like there is much effect.

“This is... over, isn’t it.”

“Did we get them!?”

It’s a one-sided development no matter how you look at it, and even Celia and Irijina are certain of their victory.

But the situation gradually starts to change. The enemy ships change direction as if defying the river’s current and makes a beeline towards the transport ships at the back.

“They’re going to attack them even though those are only transport ships?”

Well, I’m just a total amateur. When it comes to naval battles, I can only watch and make a fuss about who looks to be winning or losing.

Almost as if saying ‘they won’t let them through’, the battleships on our side turn their rudders, causing the enemy ships to change course at the same time, as both sides head towards each other, closing the distance instantly. Our ally ships start firing their catapults and ballistae, but the enemy movements are quicker, going from upstream to downstream, contrasting with our allies, who are opposing the current and moving

quite sluggishly.

Passing each other, the enemy ships throw various burning objects repeatedly, probably pots of oil, directly at the ships on our side. In the blink of an eye, close to ten ally battleships burst into flame.

“They got us!?”

“But if they push through, it will be our turn to go downstream next. Wouldn’t the state of battle be flipped again?”

However, unlike what Celia said, the enemy changes their course before passing by completely, and runs parallel to our ally ships while still sticking close to them. When I look carefully, the ally ships stagger when they expose the side of their ships to the current, while the enemy is able to move swiftly without a hitch.

“It’s the size, isn’t it.”

Leopolt was here!?

“Our ally ships are affected largely by the current and not able to make tight turns easily. The Federation’s battleships assume that we will be fighting in a wide river... going downstream with a gentle current. This river is too narrow and too quick.”

The enemy clashes fiercely with our ally ships in this packed state. According to Pipi, they are also boarding the ships and fighting each other.

As the chaos continues, a portion of the enemy goes around the battlefield and gets upstream. Then, they use their paddles and work with the current to start increasing their speed.

“They’re intending to charge!?”

“Rushing in with naval rams<sup>1!!</sup>”

The enemy is charging one after the other, aiming at the side of our ally ships, who are unable to move their rudders the way they want because of the close-quarter battle. The battleships, hit on the side with an accelerated charge, keel over one by one and sinks. The other ships are hurling fire at them too, so it isn’t a situation where they

could put up a decent fight.

“I guess this is it.”

“Yes, it is our defeat. We’ll have to hurry and unload the soldiers who boarded the ships or else... it looks like we’re too late.”

The enemy fleet, who neutralized our battleships, heads straight for the transport ships overseeing everything from the back. Even if they wanted to hurry and escape, the several hundred tightly packed transport ships are slow and unable to make any quick movements. Preparing to be attacked with fire, the soldiers scoop water from a tub.

The enemy doesn’t attack with all their ships, but approaches the ally transport ships with only several ships.

“What is that? Why don’t they attack altogether?”

“...naval warfare is also outside my area of expertise so I’m not quite sure.”

But the answer would soon reveal itself. The ships are rowing their paddles furiously, but is then enveloped in an inferno. They must have spread oil on themselves and set it on fire. The crew jumps into the river and the flaming, unmanned boat charges into the ally fleet.

They were prepared for attacks like oil pots, but something like entire ships being set on fire and ramming into them was outside everyone’s expectations. The boats that were hit instantly caught on fire and even start to spread to the nearby ships.

Because there is nowhere to run on a river, the soldiers are all jumping out from the burning fleet. Some soldiers, who were still wearing armor, get chased by fire inside the ships and jump off too, but naturally they don’t come back up again.

The enemy, confirming that the fleet is in a state of panic, approaches while keeping enough distance to not let the fire spread, and fires flaming arrows. The transport fleet, that were turned into burning torches, welcomed the night by continuing to burn endlessly and illuminating the town with an eerie glow.

Only five of the thirty large-sized battleships of the King’s sponsored fleet remain as

they disappear far off on the river, only a little over 2000 soldiers stayed alive and are able to step on the ground out of the total 20 000.

Goldonia, having lost their method of crossing the river, lost their method to attack Magrado, and the King's ambition, of wanting to rule over the entirety of the northern central plains, is blocked by a wall of water even more impenetrable than those of the Majino fortress.

Looking at the bigger picture, this final result left a bitter aftertaste to the overwhelming victory attained in the war.



“But that was a close call. If we departed on the earlier voyage, we would be the ones dead by now.”

None of the nobles who took my place came back. I want to thank my diarrhea.

“Diarrhea... is it...? Uuuuu.”

It seems Celia is getting traumatized just thinking about it.

“Y-yeah! If master wants... I can do it! For my beloved master, getting dirty is nothing to me!”

What is Leah saying? It's probably something in another unknown realm.

---

Aegir Hardlett. 21 years old. Autumn. Wartime (end)

Subordinate Units

Private Army: 9400

Infantry: 2000, Cavalry: 1200, Archers: 700, Combat Engineers: 200, Bow Cavalry: 5300

Subordinates: Leopolt (Chief of Staff and Deputy General Commander), Celia (Adjutant, Escort Captain), Irijina (Commander), Luna (Bow Cavalry Commander), Pipi (Mascot), Leah (Night Attendant), Myla (prisoner of sex)

Current Location: ——

Accomplishments: Annihilation of Treia Eastern Defence Forces (surrender), Captured Roleil, Magrado Army defeated, Treia's Imperial Army destroyed, Fell the Majino Fortress (Joint), Repelled the Yurest Alliance Army, Yurest's Unconditional Surrender





PDF BY: TRAITORAIZEN